

A
GRAMMAR
OF THE
ITALIAN LANGUAGE.
IN TWO PARTS.

In the FIRST, The RUDIMENTS are accurately delivered ; The PECULIARITIES and IDIOMS carefully noted ; and the Learner completely instructed to read, write and speak ITALIAN correctly.

To which are added, RULES never before published ; particularly for a true PRONUNCIATION, which is carefully exemplified by correspondent Sounds in *English Syllables*.

The SECOND PART contains an Italian and English VOCABULARY ; a Collection of the most useful ADJECTIVES ; ITALIAN PHRASES on different Subjects ; Miscellaneous PHRASES ; FAMILIAR DIALOGUES in Italian and English ; and the choicest ITALIAN PROVERBS.

By EVANGELIST PALERMO, A.M.

Editor of ALTIERI's Italian and English Dictionary,
and Teacher of the Italian Tongue in LONDON.

LONDON:

Printed for A. MILLAR in the Strand.

MDCCLV.

GRAMMAR

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE.

IN TWO PARTS.



In the first Part, the Elements of the Italian Language are delivered, and the most commonly used Words are carefully noted; and the first Part is intended to teach the Reader to read and speak Italian correctly.

To which are added, RULES never before published; particularly for a true Pronunciation, which is carefully exemplified by corresponding Sounds in English Spelling.

The second Part contains an Italian and English Vocabulary; a Collection of the most useful Proverbs; Italian Phrases on different Subjects; Italian and English Sentences; and the choice Italian Proverbs.

By EVANGELIST PALERMO, M.A.

Editor of ALFANI'S Italian and English Dictionary,
and Teacher of the Italian Tongue in London.

L O N D O N :

Printed for A. MILLAR in the Strand.

MDCCLV.

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

J O H N,

EARL of CORK and ORRERY, &c.

This GRAMMAR of the ITALIAN
LANGUAGE is, with all Humility,
Inscribed,

By His LORDSHIP'S

Most obedient and

most humble Servant,

LONDON,
March 1755.

Evangelist Palermo.

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

7 0 H N



EARL OF COCKFERRY, &c.

This GRAMMAR of the ITALIAN
LANGUAGE is with all Humility
intended,

By His Lordship's

Most obedient and

most humble servant,

Evangelist Polverno.

London
1772

P R E F A C E.

THE great necessity there was for a good Italian Grammar, and the pressing importunities of my friends, have induced me to publish this; which, like the industrious bee, I have collected from the flowers of the best Grammarians; amongst whom I have selected the famous *Buonmattei* and *Gigli*, both public Professors of the *Tuscan* Language; the former in the City of *Pisa* and *Florence*, and the latter in the University of *Siena*: Nor were the Grammars of *Veneroni* and *Antonini*, both in French and Italian, altogether unworthy my notice. As for those which have hitherto appeared in English, they are chiefly grounded upon the above Authors; nevertheless I have con-

A 3

sidered

sidered them all, and must own that I have found very good grammatical Maxims and well digested Rules, although mixed with some errors and contradictions, as evidently appear in some of them; however, I do not think it generous to follow the modern grammarians in criticising upon our ancestors, or to inhanse the value of this Grammar, by maliciously depreciating or calumniating others; nor do I see any occasion for it, since the work of an Author, in proper hands, carries with it its own recommendation or disgrace.

But thus much I can affirm with the greatest truth, That I have consulted all the Italian Grammars extant, even those published in other Languages, which were collected from the best Authors; and have with no small pains extracted something from almost every one for the composition of this Grammar; having also enriched it with some necessary Rules, and at the same time taken particular care to avoid whatever was erroneous, obsolete, superfluous and confused.

As

The P R E F A C E: vii

As to the *Plan* or *Method*, as well as the *Explication* of the Rules, I have used my best endeavours to render them easy, clear, and concise; to which purpose I have divided this Work into two Parts; namely, *Theoretical* and *Practical*. In the former I have included all the Parts of Speech, and have given with respect to each such well-grounded Rules, fully exemplified, as are immediately useful for Beginners, each of which is followed by some necessary Remarks on the peculiarities of the Italian Language.

Concerning *Pronunciation*, you will here find the Rules not so falsely exemplified with respect to English Sounds as in other Grammars, and particularly those which have been reputed the best; and especially the pronunciation of every individual Letter, which I have conveyed to the mind by some equivalent Words or English Syllables, that form nearly the same sound as each Italian Letter, in such a manner, that every Beginner by himself may properly pronounce the whole Italian *Alphabet* with little or no assistance: A method so very useful and necessary

viii The P R E F A C E.

fary that I am surpris'd it was never practis'd before.

In short, upon a fair comparison of this with former Grammars, I am in no pain where and to whom the preference will be given, after the care I have taken to adapt the instructions to every capacity, and to observe the propriety of the modern Italian.

From the experience I have had for many years, while I have been honoured with the instruction of several Persons of Quality of both Sexes here in England, I have found that almost every Gentleman is acquainted with Latin and French; and that the Ladies in general have a pretty good notion of the latter, which has been the reason of my omitting the explication of the grammatical terms, as also the useless repetition of rules in Syntax, because the Italian (which may properly be said to be between the two languages named above, though derived from the former) has so great an affinity with them in respect to concordance and government; besides I had scarce any particular rules to lay down, except only some necessary obser-

The P R E F A C E. ix

observations which are to be met with in my *Remarks*.

Moreover, the most part of words, may, with a little alteration, from the above two languages, be rendered into Italian, as may be seen in its proper place; the knowledge whereof will render it the easier and sooner to be learnt.

As to the SECOND PART of this Grammar, called *Practical*, you will find nothing therein but what is very useful and necessary for Beginners, either in speaking or writing. I flatter myself with hopes that this Grammar may become a standing model, not only for Learners but even for Masters to go by; however, as I know it is next to impossible for an Author to please every one, I am not certain, neither do I care, whether I shall escape the criticism of some who have naturally a spirit of contradiction, or of those who neither having a liberal education, and whose mother tongue is either French, German, &c. yet would pretend to be properly qualified to teach the Italian Language, without any other talents than those

x The P R E F A C E.

those of finding fault where there really is none; or giving false instructions under the specious pretence of teaching, what they call, *Modern Italian*; which is an imposition on Beginners, as flagrant and foolish, as that of pointing out colours to the blind.

It is needless to enlarge upon the sweetness and delicacy of the Italian Language, it being well known in all the Courts of Europe, and is at present the reigning taste of the English Nation; the knowledge whereof, besides being useful to all Travellers, lovers of Music, Merchants, and to those who are desirous of reading the Classics in Italian, is reputed as a fine qualification for both Sexes, and no small part of polite Education.



C O N-

CONTENTS.

PART FIRST.

CHAP. I.

OF the Letters and their Pronunciation, Page 2

Of the Pronunciation of some particular
Letters and Syllables,

Of Diphthongs,

A Collection of some Italian Words, wherein
all the former Rules concerning true Pro-
nunciation of Syllables are fully exempli-
fied,

Of the Accent,

Of the Grave Accent,

Of the Acute Accent,

Of the Apostrophe,

Of Words which never admit either of an
Apostrophe or Retrenchment,

CHAP. II.

Of the Parts of Speech,

Of the Articles,

Of the Declension of the Articles,

How to use all the above Articles and with
what Substantives,

Remarks on the Articles,

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

<i>Of the Nouns and their Terminations,</i>	Page 28
<i>The Declension of the Substantives with their respective Articles,</i>	38
<i>Declension of Proper Names,</i>	42
<i>Of the Figure and Species of Nouns,</i>	45
<i>Of the Augmentation and Diminution of Nouns,</i>	47
<i>Of the Adjectives,</i>	50
<i>Of the Termination of the Adjectives,</i>	ibid.
<i>Of the Comparison of the Adjectives,</i>	51
<i>Remarks on the Comparatives,</i>	54
<i>Of Numeral Nouns,</i>	58
<i>Remarks on the Numbers,</i>	60
<i>Rules for those who understand the Latin Language,</i>	62
<i>Rules for those who understand the French Language,</i>	64

CHAP. IV.

<i>Of Pronouns,</i>	66
<i>Of Personal Pronouns,</i>	67
<i>Remarks on the Personal Pronouns,</i>	70
<i>Of the Peculiarity of the Italian Language, not only in Personal Pronouns but also in some Nouns,</i>	71
<i>Another Peculiarity of the Personal Pronouns in speaking to a second Person,</i>	73
<i>Of Pronouns Conjunctive,</i>	75
<i>Remarks upon the Pronouns Conjunctive,</i>	79
<i>Of Pronouns Conjunctive Copulative,</i>	81
<i>Remarks upon the Pronouns Conjunctive Co- pulative,</i>	83
<i>Of</i>	Of

CONTENTS.

XIII

Of Pronouns Possessive,	Page 86
Remarks on the Pronouns Possessive,	91
Of Pronouns Demonstrative,	95
Remarks on the Pronouns Demonstrative,	98
Of Pronouns Relative,	100
Remarks on the Pronouns Relative,	102
Of Pronouns Interrogative,	104
Remarks on the Pronouns Interrogative,	105
Of Indefinite Pronouns,	106
Remarks on some Indefinite Pronouns,	108

C H A P. V.

Of Verbs,	113
The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb, <i>avere</i> , to have,	126
The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb, <i>essere</i> , to be,	131
Remarks on the Infinitives, Gerunds, and Participles of both the Auxiliary, as well as of all the other Verbs in general,	136
A Table useful to shew in one View the Ter- minations of all the Persons of Tenses, as well as of the Infinitives, Gerunds, and Participles of the Regular Verbs of all three Conjugations,	140

The Three Conjugations of Regular Verbs.

The First Conjugation in <i>are</i> , as <i>amare</i> , to love,	142
The Second Conjugation in <i>ere</i> , as <i>credere</i> , to believe,	146
The Third Conjugation in <i>ire</i> , as <i>dormire</i> , to sleep,	151

<i>Observations on Verbs of the First Conjugation ending in care and gare,</i>	Page 155
<i>The Conjugation of Passive Verbs,</i>	157
<i>The Conjugation of Reciprocal or Reflexed Verbs,</i>	158
<i>A Collection of the most useful Regular Verbs of the First Conjugation,</i>	164
<i>A Collection of all the Regular Verbs of the Second Conjugation,</i>	169
<i>A Collection of all the Regular Verbs of the Third Conjugation,</i>	170
<i>Of the Irregular Verbs,</i>	ibid.
<i>Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation,</i>	171
<i>Observations upon them,</i>	182
<i>Of the Irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation that have their Infinitive in ére long,</i>	185
<i>Of the Irregular Verbs in ére short, and their different Terminations,</i>	205
<i>Of Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation,</i>	219
<i>Of Verbs Impersonal,</i>	231
<i>How to express in Italian there is or there are, there was or there were, &c.</i>	235

CHAP. VI.

<i>Of Participles,</i>	238
------------------------	-----

CHAP. VII.

<i>Of Adverbs,</i>	242
--------------------	-----

CHAP. VIII.

<i>Of Prepositions,</i>	254
-------------------------	-----

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. IX.

Of Interjections,

Page 257

CHAP. X.

Of Conjunctions,

258

PART SECOND.

An Italian and English Vocabulary, 261

A Collection of the most useful Adjectives, 327

*A Collection of familiar Italian Phrases on
different Subjects,* 335

Miscellaneous Phrases, 351


Familiar Dialogues in Italian and English, 357

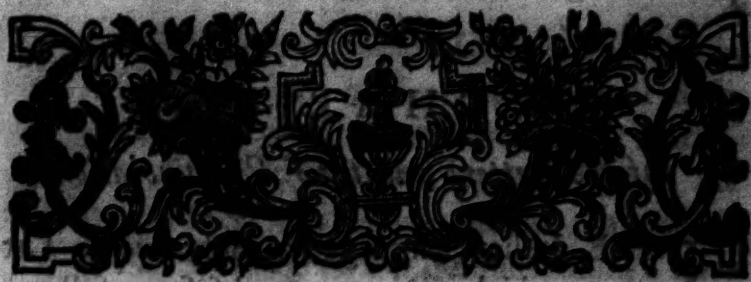
A Collection of the choicest Italian Proverbs, 384



ERRATA.

Page 3.	Line 1.	for that vary,	read vary,
5.	14.	ob miraviglia,	maraviglia.
12.	11.	foia,	scia.
16.	12.	together,	to gather.
59.	23.	at bottom of first col. add,	due mila 2000.
			un milione 10000.
			due milioni, &c. 20000, &c.
63.	28.	Egli or lui,	read Egli, lui or esso.
ibid.	33.	Egli or loro,	Egli, loro or essi.
69.	3.	Ella or lei,	Ella, lei or essa.
ibid.	8.	Elleno or loro,	Elleno, loro or essi.
77.	22.	or to it, viz. to any,	or it, viz. any.
199.	11.	Je potrei, I have been?	Je potrei, I was able, &c.
		able, &c.	and so thro' all the same Tense.
123.	19.	andare a videre,	andare a vedere.


 The AUTHOR may be directed to at
 Mr MILLAR's, Bookseller in the
 Strand.



pronounced alike both in Italian and English. M. R. The letters A, a, m, n, o, ſ, are pro-

THE

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

day	—	—	—	—	—	—
day	—	—	—	—	—	—
day	—	—	—	—	—	—

1	—	—	—	—	—	—
2	—	—	—	—	—	—

PART I.

THE true pronunciation of Words

T in any language consists in the right
founding of the Letters; therefore,

in order to convey to Learners a clear and certain idea of the pro-

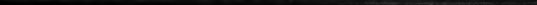
of the Italian Letters, I have placed
posite to each Letter certain Words or Syllables

ch form nearly the same found in English, as correspondent Letter does in Italian; and will

at one view to instruct every Beginner to pronounce the whole Italian alphabet with the ut-

...case and propriety.

CHAPTER



CHAP. I.

Of the Letters and their Pronunciation.

THE Italian language has only twenty Letters, which are pronounced soft, as follows;

N. B. The Letters *f, l, m, n, o, s,* are pronounced alike both in Italian and English.

Italian Letters, Capital Small.		English sounds corresponding.	
<i>A</i>	<i>a</i>	Sounds as	aw
<i>B</i>	<i>b</i>	— — —	bay
<i>C</i>	<i>c</i>	— — —	chay
<i>D</i>	<i>d</i>	— — —	day
<i>E</i>	<i>e</i>	— — —	a
<i>F</i>	<i>f</i>	— — —	—
<i>G</i>	<i>g</i>	— — —	jay
<i>H</i>	<i>h</i>	— — —	awk
<i>I</i>	<i>i</i>	— — —	ee
<i>L</i>	<i>l</i>	— — —	—
<i>M</i>	<i>m</i>	— — —	—
<i>N</i>	<i>n</i>	— — —	—
<i>O</i>	<i>o</i>	— — —	—
<i>P</i>	<i>p</i>	— — —	pay
<i>Q</i>	<i>q</i>	— — —	coo
<i>R</i>	<i>r</i>	— — —	err
<i>S</i>	<i>s</i>	— — —	—
<i>T</i>	<i>t</i>	— — —	tay
<i>U</i>	<i>u</i>	— — —	oo
<i>Z</i>	<i>z</i>	— — —	zeta

The above Letters are divided into Vowels and Consonants, the Vowels are five, *viz. a e i o u,* the rest are Consonants.

The Italians make no use of the letters *k, x, w, y.*

A few of the above twenty Letters that vary in their sound, being sometimes pronounced Soft, and sometimes Hard, according to their combination in forming Syllables; but, to avoid the confusion which other Grammarians have been guilty of in treating on the pronunciation, I have thought proper to omit their intricate rules, as not fit for beginners, because the above method of pronunciation in general being known, the rest will be better acquired by practice than by rules: besides, the natural harmony of the Italian language will gradually teach them to pronounce it aright; as to what is most essential, observe what follows.

*Of the Pronunciation of some particular Letters
and Syllables.*

IT is proper to observe, that *c*, before *a*, *o*, *u*, sounds like the English *k*; as *camera*, chamber; *colore*, colour; *cura*, care; &c. read *kamera*, *kolore*, *kura*.

C, before *e* or *i*, sounds like the English *ch*; as in the words *cherry* and *chick*. Example, *Cesare*, *Cæsar*, *civile*, civil; &c. read *Chesare*, *chivile*.

Cb, before *e* or *i*, sounds like the English *k*; as *cbeto*, quiet; *chirurgo*, a surgeon; &c. read *keto*, *kirurgo*.

Ci, before *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, must be pronounced in one Syllable, and then the Vowel *i* is scarcely sounded, as *cia*, *cie*, *cio*, *ciu*. Example, *Francia*, France; *Cielo*, Heaven; *bacio*, a kiss; *ciurma*, a crowd.

G in the middle of a Word is generally the beginning of a Syllable, which is contrary to the English language, in which it always ends a Syllable. Ex. *ma-gna-ni-mi-tà*, mag-na-ni-mi-ty, &c.

G, before *a, o, u, r*, is pronounced as in English. Ex. *gabia*, a cage; *gobbo*, crooked; *gusto*, taste; *grave*, heavy, &c.

G, before *e* or *i*, sounds like *jay, jee*, in English; as *gelo* frost, *giro*, a turn, &c. read *jalo, jeero*.

Gb before *e* sounds like *gay* in English. As *piaghe*, wounds, &c. read *piagay*.

Gb before *i* has the very same sound as *gee* in the English word *Geese*.

Gi, before *a, e, o, u*, must be pronounced in one Syllable with each of these four Letters; and the *i* is scarcely sounded, as was before said of the *ti*; as *gia, gie, gio, giu*. Example, *giallo*, yellow; *Algieri*, Algiers; *Giove*, Jupiter; *giudice*, judge.

G before *l* is almost converted into another *l*; as *gli*, the, read *lli*; the true and exact pronunciation whereof cannot be learnt but by the help of a master. From this rule are excepted *globo*, globe; *gloria*, glory; *negligente*, negligence; *negletto*, neglect; *conglutinare*, to conglutinate; in which Words the *g* is sounded as in English.

Gli, when it comes into a word before *a, e, o, u*, the *i* is scarcely pronounced.

Gn before *a, e, o, u*, the *g* is almost changed into another *n*, and as if an *i* were between the proper *n* and the vowel; thus *gna, gne, gno, gnu*, ; read *nnia,*

nnia, nnie, nnio, nniu: but the true pronunciation of these Syllables must be obtained by the help of a master.

Gu, before *a, e, i*, is pronounced as if it were in English *gwau, gway, gwee*.

H cannot properly be called a Letter; nevertheless, according to the opinion of the modern grammarians, it has continued in the Italian language, which has it from the Latin, and serves for three purposes; viz. for an Aspiration, for half a Letter, and for a Distinction.

It serves as an Aspiration in the words of calling, laughing, admiration or exclamation; as in *oh oh, eh eh, uh*. Example, *oh miraviglia! oh wonderful! eh via, foh, &c.*

As half a Letter; whenever it comes between *c* and *e* or *c* and *i*, also between *g* and *e* or *g* and *i*, as *che, chi, ghe, ghi*, because these Syllables wrote without *b* have a different sound than when wrote with it, as is sufficiently demonstrated before in treating of *c* and *g*, *ch* and *gh* before *e* or *i*.

As a Distinction, which is the chiefest of all, and is commonly made use of to avoid the equivocation of two words spelt the same way, but of different significations, which is only known by the *b*; for example, *banno* they have, *anno* the year; *bamo* a fishing hook, *amo* I love; *ghiaccio* the ice, *giaccio* I lay down; *ho* I have, *o* a mark of the vocative case; *ha* he has, *a* to, an article of the dative case, &c. Upon the whole, *b* is never pronounced either in the beginning or

6 THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

middle of a Word, except (as was said before) when it comes between *c* and *e* or *e* and *i*, or *g* and *e* or *g* and *i*. And moreover, according to the above modern writers, it is never wrote in those Words where there is no equivocation; so that now we write *uomini*, men, and not *buomini*; *abbiamo*, we have, and not *habbiamo*; *veemente*, and not *vehemente*; *Cristo*, and not *Gbristo*, &c. as several ancients and some few moderns have lately done.

Qu, before *a*, *e*, *i*, sounds as in English *quaw*, *quay*, *quew*.

Se, before *e* or *i*, is pronounced like the English *sh*.

Ti, before *a*, *e*, *o*, has two manner of sounds, one soft, the other hard; the soft, which is its general pronunciation in Italian, sounds like *ts*. Example, *gratia*, grace; *amicitia*, amity; read *grat^sia*, *amicit^sia*.

Note, That when the pronunciation of *ti* is so soft, the best modern writers change the *t* into *z*, because in such Syllables the *t* has the sound of *ts*, which is the general sound of the *z*, as you will hereafter see in its proper place. So that you will never find these or the like Words, where the *t* is pronounced so soft, wrote in the Dictionary with *ti* but with *zi*; as *grazia*, *amicizia*, &c.

Also, our modern writers change the termination of all Words ending in *antia* and *entia*, derived from the Latin, into *anza* and *enza* in Italian; as for example, *temperanza* for *temperantia*, *arroganza* for *arrogantia*, *prudenza* for *prudentia*, &c.

The

The hard sound of *ti* is not so common as the above, and sounds in English like the *ti* of *Tiberius*, titular and *Tiverton*; for example, *simpatia*, sympathy; *malattia*, sickness; *questione*, question; *molestia*, trouble; *Antiochia*, Antioch; *potiate*, you may be able; and others which may be obtained by practice.

U before *o* is scarce ever pronounced, so that we pass over it in a quick and graceful manner, laying the stress on the *o*; as in *buono*, good; *cuore*, heart; *uomo*, a man, &c. which manner of pronunciation is so nice and delicate in the Italian language that its impossible to be learnt but by a master who can pronounce it with propriety.

From the above rule are excepted the following words, the *u* of which preserves the like sound as *oo* in the English: Example, *tuo*, thine; *suo*, his or hers; *virtuoso*, virtuous; and *duo*, two; but now we say *due* instead of *duo*.

Z sounds generally like *ts* in English: Exam. *milza*, the spleen; *ronzino*, a nag; *forza*, strength; *amicizia*, friendship; *grazia*, grace; &c. read *miltza*, *rontfino*, *fortsa*, &c.

Z in some Words sounds like *ds* in English: as *zero*, the figure of nought in arithmetic; *zodiaco*, the zodiac; *Lazaro*, Lazarus; *gazzetta*, gazette; *mezo* or *mezzo*, the middle, &c. read *dsero*, *dsodiaco*, *ladfaro*, *gadsetta*, &c.

Two *zz* commonly come between two Vowels, the first whereof sounds like a *t* and the second like *s* in English, so that they follow the above

8 THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

rule of *ts*, but pronounced with somewhat greater force. Example, *pazzo*, a fool; *bellezza*, beauty; *fazzoletto*, a handkerchief; *nozze*, wedding; *pozzo*, a well, &c.

Note, That the best ancient Italian writers, as DANTE, DAVILA, PETRARCA, BOCCACCIO, and many others, made no difference in their writings, in marking or forming the Letters *u* and *i* Vowels, and *v* and *j* Consonants, having indifferently made use of them; and generally when they should have been marked as Consonants they have marked them as Vowels; which is contrary to the propriety of the modern Italians, and often puzzles those who learn the language in pronouncing words in which such errors are to be found; so that in order to avoid such difficulty in writing, you may observe the following rules which will confront the books published by modern authors.

When either of the above two Letters is the beginning of a Syllable followed by a Vowel they are always marked thus, *j*, *v*, except in *uomo*, a man.

Y, before *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, has the sound of the English *y*, that is to say, it preserves the same sound as the vowel *i* in Italian, which is quite contrary to the English pronunciation, as you will find when you come to the Syllables in Italian Words that are most difficult to the English learner, p. 11, 12. and when you are advanced in the grammar in Substantives terminating in *io*, you will find how, by the *j* Consonant at the end of a few words, you are to distinguish the signification of one from another.

V,

V, before *a, e, i, o, u*, is pronounced as in English. Example, *vano*, vain; *vento*, wind; *vita*, life; *voce*, voice; *vulgare*, vulgar.

V sometimes is followed by an *r*, but is nothing else than either a *p* changed into *v*, or a contraction of a word. Example, *souano* for *soprano*, a sovereign; *cavra* for *capra*, a goat; *avrò* for *averò*, I shall have; *avremo* for *averemo*, we shall have, &c.

Note, lastly, When two Consonants of the same sort meet together in a word preceeding each other, the first of them is to be sounded longer than usual, which is the same as pronouncing both of them; otherwise many words would change their signification, if not properly spelt or pronounced according to the above rule.

Example, *pena*, pain; *penna*, pen; *capello*, hair; *cappello*, hat; *sono*, I am; *sonno*, sleep; *vano*, vain; *vanno*, they go, &c.

OF DIPHTHONGS.

BESIDES the abovesaid rules for Syllables which consist of Vowels and Consonants together, there are other Syllables consisting of none but Vowels, called Diphthongs, which are eighteen in all, and are nothing more than the sound of two Vowels in the same Syllable; nine whereof are called Open Diphthongs, and nine Close.

The Open Diphthongs are those wherein both Vowels are distinctly pronounced, but the greatest stress lies on the first Vowels.

The

The Close Diphthongs are those in which both Vowels are not so distinctly pronounced; but the first is almost sunk, and consequently the greatest stress lies on the second:

E X A M P L E S.

Open Diphthongs.	Close Diphthongs.
<i>ae</i> as <i>aere</i> , air	<i>ia</i> as <i>fiato</i> , breath
<i>ai</i> <i>mai</i> , never	<i>ie</i> <i>Cielo</i> , Heaven
<i>ao</i> <i>Paolo</i> , Paul	<i>io</i> <i>piove</i> , it rains
<i>au</i> <i>autore</i> , author	<i>iu</i> <i>fiume</i> , river
<i>ea</i> <i>borea</i> , the north wind	<i>oi</i> <i>oimè</i> , alas, Interj.
<i>ee</i> <i>veemente</i> , vehement	<i>ua</i> <i>quando</i> , when
<i>ei</i> <i>costei</i> , this woman	<i>ue</i> <i>quello</i> , that
<i>eo</i> <i>Eolo</i> , Eolus	<i>ui</i> <i>guida</i> , guide
<i>eu</i> <i>Europa</i> , Europe	<i>uo</i> <i>buono</i> , good

All the above rules being well understood, it is very proper to put them in practice, which by the assistance of a good master will lead you into the true pronunciation; for which purpose I have made the following collection of Italian words, where all the above rules are to be met with.

A collection of some Italian Words wherein all the former rules concerning the true pronunciation of Syllables are fully exemplified.

IN the first column are placed the Italian Syllables. In the second is shewn how they sound in English; only observe here, that whenever the letter *e* comes before *a* or *o* in the English sounds,

it

it is to be pronounced very quick, which manner answers to the pronunciation of the Italian Close Diphthongs.

All the rest in the third column are Italian Words, wherein you will find the true sound of each Syllable answerable to the Italian Syllables, and the English sounds in the same line.

Note, That the true pronunciation of the nine Italian Syllables marked with a star, though I have put the English sounds as near as possible, yet, by reason of some difficulty, they ought to be learnt by a master.

Italian Syllables,	English sounds.	Italian Words, wherein the opposite Syllables are exemplified.
<i>ce</i>	chay, as in	<i>cena, cenere, accento, corto, celebre.</i>
<i>ci</i>	chee	<i>cicrona, cecità, accidente, cibo, citara.</i>
<i>che</i>	kay	<i>prediche, barbe, perche, amiche, anche.</i>
<i>chi</i>	kee	<i>chimico, chinare, chiave, antichi, bisbeti.</i>
<i>cia</i>	cheaw	<i>ciabattino, ciarla, acetaro, cacciatore, faccia.</i>
<i>cie</i>	cheay	<i>cielo, cieco, acciecare, guancia, ciera.</i>
<i>cio</i>	cheo	<i>bacio, cioè, taceti, ciò, accio.</i>
<i>ciu</i>	cheoo	<i>ciurma, fanciullo, tacciuto, piaciuto.</i>
<i>ge</i>	jay	<i>gelo, gentroso, aggenti, generale, legge.</i>
<i>gi</i>	jee	<i>giro, legittimo, raggi, leggi, gigante.</i>
<i>ghe</i>	gay [geese	<i>righe, legge, pagherò, pagheremo.</i>
<i>ghi</i>	as the gee of	<i>taghi, ghirlanda, maghi, ghio, ghirno.</i>
<i>gia</i>	jeaw	<i>gialla, giacinto, giardino, ginchi, giamai.</i>
<i>gie</i>	jeay	<i>effigie, leggiero, regie, algieri.</i>
<i>gio</i>	jco	<i>giovane, glove, gioso, giorno, giocondo.</i>
<i>giu</i>	jcoo	<i>giudei, giudice, giudizio, giubilo, giuro.</i>
* <i>gli</i>	lle	<i>gli, degli, agli, dagli.</i>
* <i>glia</i>	lleaw	<i>figlia, paglia, paglia, concubiglia, maglia.</i>
* <i>glie</i>	lleay	<i>moglie, coglie, foglie, spoglie.</i>
* <i>glio</i>	leo	<i>foglio, voglie, miglio, orgoglio, figlia.</i>
* <i>gua</i>	nneaw	<i>legna, spagna, sardagna, campagna, bagna.</i>
* <i>/gne</i>	nneay	<i>degne, pregna, campagne, agnello, bagnarà.</i>
* <i>gni</i>	nne	<i>ogni, degni, pagni, bogni, regni.</i>
* <i>gno</i>	nneo	<i>regno, sdegno, legno, segno, signore.</i>
* <i>gnu</i>	nneu	<i>ignudare, ignudo, ignudi, ignuda.</i>

Italian

Italian Syllables.	English sounds.	Italian Words, wherein the opposite Syllables are exemplified.
<i>gua</i>	gwau	<i>guarini, guadagno, guardare, guardia.</i>
<i>gue</i>	gway	<i>guerra, lingue, guerzio, sangue, langue.</i>
<i>gui</i>	gwee	<i>guida, languido, languire, guiderdone, guidare.</i>
<i>qua</i>	qwau	<i>qualità, quale, quasi, quaranta, quanto.</i>
<i>que</i>	qway	<i>quello, questo, querela, quesito, questione.</i>
<i>qui</i>	qwee	<i>quinio, quindici, quindi, quieto, quinti.</i>
<i>seo</i>	shay	<i>scena, scolorato, scolto, scemare, pesce.</i>
<i>sei</i>	shee	<i>scimia, scimunito, scimitarra, scintilla.</i>
<i>soia</i>	sheaw	<i>sciagura, sciancato, fascia, lasciare.</i>
<i>scio</i>	shes	<i>angoscia, fascio, scienza, sciente, scientifico.</i>
<i>scio</i>	sheo	<i>sciocco, sciolto, lascio, fascio, scioperato.</i>
<i>sciu</i>	shedo	<i>asciugare, asciutto, asciugatojo, presciutto.</i>
<i>ti</i> soft	as <i>ti</i>	<i>amicizia, gratia, delizia, nazione, ambizione.</i>
		Moderns write thus,
		<i>amicizia, grazia, delizia, nazione, ambizione.</i>
<i>ti</i> hard	as <i>ti</i> in Tiverton	<i>simpatia, malattia, potate, questione, molestia.</i>
	the <i>u</i> is almost	
<i>uo</i>	lost in pronoun-	} <i>buono, luogo, fuoco, tuono, uomo, &c.</i>
	cing	
<i>ja</i>	yaw	<i>jattura, gioja, savoja.</i>
<i>je</i>	yea	<i>jeri, noje, gioje.</i>
<i>jo</i>	yo	<i>jola, librajò, geunajo.</i>
<i>ju</i>	you	<i>juridico, ajuto, ajutare.</i>

N. B. When you have attained the true pronunciation of the above Italian Words you will find no difficulty in the rest; yet, for the greater facility and right understanding, take notice of the following rules concerning Accent and Apostrophe, both which tend very much to the true pronunciation of the Italian language.

Of the Accent.

THE Accent is the raising of one's voice in some particular Syllables by which the Words are pronounced either long or short. By the Accent very often we distinguish the different signifi-
tion

tion of two Words spelt the same way, the equivocation whereof is avoided by it. Example, *terra*, earth; *terrà*, he shall hold, &c. In the Accent are two things to be considered; viz. its Nature and its Place.

The Accent is commonly divided in two; viz. Grave and Acute, and each of them is differently formed, as may be observed in the following figures.

(\) Grave, (/) Acute.

The Grave Accent (which is most frequently made use of in Italian) is always placed on the last Letter of some Word ending with a Vowel, but the Acute in the beginning or middle of Words; nevertheless the latter is never used in writing, but always observed in the pronunciation; and for your better understanding this observe the following rules.

Of the Grave Accent.

THIS Accent is used upon the last Letter of those Italian Words ending in *tà*, which are generally derived from the Latin *tas*, and commonly ending in *ty* in English. Example, *purità*, purity; *capacità*, capacity; *onestà*, honesty; *sincerità*, sincerity; *liberalità*, liberality, &c. This Accent is also used upon all Italian Words ending in *a*. Ex. *servitù*, servitude; *virtù*, virtue; *Gioventù*, youth; *Gesù*, Jesus, &c. All the third persons singular of the Preterperfect definite of all the three regular conjugations of Verbs ought to be marked with the Grave Accent upon the last Letter.

ter. Example, *amò*, he did love; *credè*, he did believe; *dormì*, he did sleep.

Also with the same Accent ought to be marked upon the last Letter all the first and third persons singular of all the future tenses of all Verbs either regular or irregular. Example, *amerà*, I shall love; *amerà*, he shall love; *crederà*, I shall believe; *crederà*, he shall believe; *dormirà*, I shall sleep; *dormirà*, he shall sleep.

The most part of Words of one Syllable (called Monosyllables) ending with a Vowel have this Accent over it. Example, *già*, already; *quì* or *quà*, here; *giù*, below; *sù*, above, &c. except *tu*, thou; and some other words which may be learnt by practice.

Note, All the modern authors think it superfluous to accent Monosyllables having but one meaning, and wherein there cannot be any equivocation; therefore it is that they do not accent *fu* he was, *so* I know, *fa* he does, &c. Besides, all the Monosyllables in the Italian language, although they are not accented, yet they are always reckoned as if the Accent really was put on them, because they are naturally so pronounced; only we are obliged to make use of the Grave Accent in those Monosyllables which are spelt the same; the signification whereof is distinguished by this Accent. Example, *dà*, he gives; *da*, from; *è*, he is; *e*, and; *di*, the day; *di*, of; *là*, there; *la*, the, &c.

Of the Acute Accent.

THIS Accent, as has been observed, is always used in pronunciation but scarce never in writing, except in those words spelt the same way, but of a different signification, which is known by this Accent or by its position in some words. Example, *ancora*, the anchor of a ship; *ancora*, also; *tenere*, tender; *tenere*, to hold, &c.

Nevertheless many authors do not use this Accent in the middle of Words, even when there is an occasion to avoid equivocation, because (as they say) the sense of the phrase will naturally lead to the signification of the Word; therefore they only mark it when it is to be placed over the first Syllable, and generally they make use of the Grave, instead of the Acute Accent, as *ancora*, *tenere*.

The Acute Accent is commonly used in the pronunciation of Words either on the last Syllable but one or the last but two; but the rules on this subject I think proper to omit, and not to confound beginners, as some Grammarians have done, with a numerous train of such rules; besides several of them are liable to many exceptions, because the Italian language (as I said before) being soft and harmonious, a proper guide and practice will lead to a just pronunciation. As to this Accent on the Syllables of Verbs, in order to know when they are to be pronounced long or short, certainly you may follow the rules only in pronunciation, according as you will find in the regular Verbs of all the three conjugations; and only

only in those persons of four Syllables, it may appear dubious to you which Syllable is to be pronounced long or short.

There is another kind of accent called Circumflex, compounded of the Grave and Acute, thus, (^) which gives a greater force to the Syllable on which it is marked. Many put it on the interjections that express desire or grief, as *ò*, also on words on which some Syllable has been cut off (commonly called Sincopé) and chiefly on some of them to be distinguished from another Word spelt alike. Example, *còrre* for *cogliere* together, and *corre* he runs; *amàro* for *amarono* they did love, and *amaro* bitter; *andàro* for *andarono*, they did go; *perìro* for *perirono*, they perished, &c. In short, this Accent is scarce ever used in Prose but only in Poetry.

Of the Apostrophe.

THE Apostrophe, also called Elision, is a mark in form of a small comma, thus, (') placed to shew there is a Vowel struck out. Generally the final Vowel of a word is struck out whenever it is followed by another word beginning with a Vowel or *b*; in which case both words are to be pronounced as if but one word. Example, *v'amo*, I love you, and not *vi amo*; *v'bò detto*, I told you, not *vi bò detto*.

But properly, according to the moderns, the Apostrophe is never used but when it makes the pronunciation more delicate, and not so often as those do who have but a slender notion of the Italian

Italian language; yet observe the following rules.

The Apostrophe is always used instead of the final vowel of the articles when they come before a word beginning with a vowel or *b*. Example, *l'amore*, the love; *l'anima*, the soul; *l'uomo*, the man; the exceptions to this rule will appear in the declension of some Substantives beginning with a vowel when they are of the plural number.

Sometimes there is an Elision made in the article *il*, by taking away the first Letter, which is quite contrary to other Elisions, whereby we retrench the vowel that is at the end of words, but this is only when the article *il* is preceded by a word that ends with a vowel; in which case the preceeding word remains entire without any abbreviation. Example, *tra'l Padre e'l Figlio*, between the Father and the Son, read *tral Padre el Figlio*.

When *che* comes before a word beginning with an *b*, we must write only *c'* with the Apostrophe. Example, *gli scolari c' hanno*, &c. instead of *che hanno*, &c. the scholars which have, &c.

The Apostrophe is made use of in the following little words, called Pronouns Conjunctives, viz. *mi, ci, ti, vi, si, ne, gli, li, lo, la, le*. Example, *m'ama*, he loves me, not *mi ama*; *l'ho dato*, I have given him, not *li ho dato*, &c.

Sometimes we retrench two words, and make one without using the Apostrophe. Example, *non lo so* for *non lo so*, I don't know it; *vel darò* for *ve lo darò*, I shall give it to you; *col mio compagno* instead of *con il mio compagno*, with my companion, &c.

Very often several words are likewise retrenched without making use of the Apostrophe, by entirely cutting off the last Letter, which generally happens in those words whose penultima is a liquid, viz. *l, m, n, r*, but those with *l* or *r* are more commonly retrenched. Example, *tal* for *tale*, such; *amiam* for *amiamo*, we love; *credon* for *credono*, they believe; *amor* for *amore*, love; *allor* for *allora*, then, &c.

N. B. If the last letter but two be the same as the last but one, as double *ll, m, rr*, then we take away one of them with the final vowel; but take notice, that if the word be either a noun or pronoun, this rule holds good only of the masculine gender in its singular number. Example, *fratel* for *fratello*, brother; *ribel* for *ribello*, rebel; *han* for *hanno*, they have; *condur* for *condurre*, to conduct, &c.

We must retrench the last Syllable of the four words, viz. *quello*, that; *bello*, handsome; *grande*, great; *santo*, saint; to which we may add *uno*, one; and *buono*, good; by taking away the last letter from these two words only, whenever either of the above six come before a masculine noun or pronoun of the singular number that begins with a consonant. Example, *quel libro*, that book; *bel fiore*, handsome flower; *gran palazzo*, a great palace; *san Giovanni*, saint John; *un principe*, a prince; *un buon soldato*, a good soldier.

Of Words which never admit either of an Apostrophe or Retrenchment.

ALL the final words of phrases, and all words before a comma or any other point or stop, admit of no Elision.

All words ending in *a* generally admit of no Apostrophe, except the article *la*, with its oblique cases.

We can't abridge a word ending with a vowel that is succeeded by another beginning with an *s* and followed with a consonant. Example, *bello specchio*, a handsome looking glass; *quello scolaro*, that scholar; *dallo studio*, from the study, &c. and not *bel specchio*, *quel scolaro*, *dal studio*.

All words accented upon the last letter suffer no Apostrophe, as *amò*, he did love; *parlerà*, he shall speak; *virtù*, virtue; *città*, city; *carità*, charity, &c.

The following words are never retrenched, viz. *orto*, a kitchen garden; *monte*, a mount; *animo*, the mind; *affanno*, trouble; *chiaro*, clear; *polo*, the points of a sea compass; *ora*, an hour; *nolo*, freight; *Apollò*, the name of a heathen God; *collo*, the neck; *duro*, hard; *inganno*, cheat; *oscuro*, obscure; *strano*, strange; *volo*, flight; *porta*, the door; and *pegno*, a pawn or pledge. Nor in all those words that have *gn* before the last letter, as *regno*, kingdom; *legno*, wood, &c. the same may be said of *abisso*, and in all those words that have double *s* before the last letter. Example, *stesso*, self-same; *rimesso*, remitted; *presso*, near, &c.

because its pronunciation would be too rough and dissonant to say *ort, mont, anim, &c.* those words ending with diphthongs, though followed by a vowel, suffer no elision. Example, *figlia*, son; *empio*, wicked; *nebbia*, fogg; *ammiraglio*, admiral, &c.

All nouns or pronouns, either in the masculine or feminine gender, suffer no Apostrophe nor abridgment in the plural number.

CHAP. II.

Of the Parts of Speech.

AFTER scholars are well acquainted with all the rules treated of concerning pronunciation, it is necessary they should be farther advanced into the Parts of Speech, of which there are nine in the Italian language; viz.

Article,	Adverb,
Noun,	Preposition,
Pronoun,	Interjection
Verb,	and
Participle,	Conjunction.

Of the Articles.

IN the Italian language, as well as in English, the Nouns have no different terminations in their cases, therefore we are obliged to make use of Articles, by which we know their genders, whether masculine or feminine; their numbers, whether singular or plural; and their cases, whether direct or oblique.

Yet

Yet the Italians observe a difference of sexes even in inanimate things; so that there is no Noun in this language but what must be either masculine or feminine, except very few that are of both genders, as will be treated of in its proper place.

The Italians have three Articles, *viz.* *il* and *lo* for the masculine, *la* for the feminine.

Note, Every nominative case of Nouns, either singular or plural, is, according to Grammarians, called Direct; and all the other cases are stiled Oblique.

Of the Declension of the Articles.

Masculine.

Sing.	Nom.	<i>il</i>	<i>lo</i>	the
	Gen.	<i>del</i>	<i>dello</i>	of the
	Dat.	<i>al</i>	<i>allo</i>	to the
	Abl.	<i>dal</i>	<i>dallo</i>	from the
Plur.	Nom.	<i>i</i>	<i>gli</i>	the
	Gen.	<i>dei</i> or <i>de'</i>	<i>degli</i>	of the
	Dat.	<i>ai</i> or <i>a'</i>	<i>agli</i>	to the
	Abl.	<i>dai</i> or <i>da'</i>	<i>dagli</i>	from the

Note, The ancients, instead of *gli*, *degli*, *agli*, *dagli*, generally made use of *li*, *delli*, *alli*, *dalli*, which are almost abolished by the modern Italians.

Feminine.

Sing.	Nom.	<i>la</i>	Plur.	Nom.	<i>le</i>
	Gen.	<i>della</i>		Gen.	<i>delle</i>
	Dat.	<i>alla</i>		Dat.	<i>alle</i>
	Abl.	<i>dalla</i>		Abl.	<i>dalle</i>

In the above declension I have left out the Articles of the Accusative and Vocative cases, because

the former is the same as the nominative, and the latter is expressed by *o* as in English.

Besides the abovementioned Articles the Italians have three more which belong to proper names of Men, Women, Cities and Villages, and serve only for the genitive, dative and ablative cases, viz.

Masculine and Feminine.

Gen. *di* of

Dat. *a* to

Abl. *da* from

In all such proper names the Article of the nominative and accusative cases caret as in English.

How to use all the above Articles, and with what Substantives.

THE Article *il* is used before Substantives of the masculine gender beginning with a consonant. Example, *il libro*, the book; *i libri*, the books; *il giardino*, the garden; *i giardini*, the gardens; *il palazzo*, the palace; *i palazzi*, the palaces, &c.

The Article *lo* is used before Substantives of the masculine gender beginning with an *s* and follow'd by a consonant. Example, *lo spirito*, the spirit; *gli spiriti*, the spirits; *lo scolaro*, the scholar; *gli scolari*, the scholars; *lo studente*, the student; *gli studenti*, the students.

Also the above Article *lo* belongs to those Substantives of the masculine gender beginning either with a vowel or an *b*, but we leave out the *o* of the Article, and instead thereof place an Apostrophe, thus *l'*; but in the plural it suffers no elision. Example, *l'amore*, the love; *gli amori*, the

the loves; *l'orologio* the watch; *gli orologi*, the watches, &c.

Except when the Substantive masculine begins with an *i*, and then the Article in the plural number suffers an elision as well as the singular. Example, *l'idolo*, the idol; *gli idoli*, the idols; *l'imperatore*, the emperor; *gli imperatori*, the emperors; *l'Italiano*, the Italian; *gli Italiani*, the Italians, &c. Observe, there are several Substantives feminine which begin with an *s* followed by a consonant. Example, *spada*, a sword; *strada*, the street; *stampa*, the press; *scala*, a stair-case or ladder; *statua*, a statue; *specie*, the kind or sort; *stagione*, season, &c. all which being of the feminine gender, we use the following feminine Articles:

The Article *la* is made use of before Substantives feminine beginning with a consonant. Example, *la casa*, the house; *le case*, the houses; *la dama*, the lady; *le dame*, the ladies; *la pittura*, the picture; *le pitture*, the pictures, &c.

When the Substantive feminine begins with a vowel we cut off the *a* of the Article *la* and place an Apostrophe in its stead; but the plural suffers no elision. Example, *l'anima*, the soul; *le anime*, the souls; *l'aquila*, the eagle; *le aquile*, the eagles; *l'ombra*, the shade; *le ombre*, the shades, &c.

Except when the Substantive feminine begins with an *e*, and then the plural suffers an elision. Example, *l'espressione*, the expression; *l'espressioni*, the expressions; *l'educazione*, the education; *l'educazioni*, the educations, &c.

But if the Substantive feminine has the same termination in the plural as in the singular, to know its number, the article plural suffers no elision. Example, *l'età*, the age; *le età*, the ages; *l'effigie*, the effigy; *le effigie*, the effigies; *l'uguaglianza*, the equality; *le uguaglianze*, the equalities; &c. though such Substantives feminine which begin with an *e* and terminate alike in both numbers are very few.

Note. That the Apostrophe in the Articles (when we have occasion to use it according to the above rules) has not been duly attended to by some, as appears in their writings, and particularly in Substantives plural beginning with a vowel, as when they say *l'anime*, *gl'antichi*, *l'opere*, instead of *le anime*, *gli antichi*, *le opere*, &c.

The Articles of proper names; viz. *di*, of; *a*, to; *da*, from; are always used with all proper names of Men, Women, Cities or Villages, as before-said; and also with some Pronouns, as shall be observed in its proper place.

When Substantives of proper names begin with a vowel, we strike out the last letter of the Articles *di* and *da*, and add *d* to the Article *a*, as may be seen in the declension of such Substantives.

EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of places, not only particular but general, as the four parts of the world, Kingdoms, Provinces, Islands and Mountains, which are commonly declin'd with the Articles *il* or *la*, according to their gender, may also be declin'd with the Articles of proper names *di*, *a*, *da*; but pro-

per

per names of Seas and Rivers are always declin'd with the Articles *il* or *la*. Example, *il Mediterraneo*, the Mediterranean; *il Tamigi*, the Thames; *la Brenta*, a river in Italy so called.

Note, The Article *di* is often used in several Substantives in both genders and numbers, which (if declin'd by themselves) would have the Articles *il*, *lo* or *la*, according to their respective genders; but this generally happens when in English they are expressed only by the Article *of*, and not *of the*. Example, a glass of wine, *un bicchiere di vino*; a man of honour, *un uomo d'onore*, *una fabrica di mattoni*, a building of bricks.

Remarks on the Articles.

“ALL the oblique cases of *i*, *la*, *le*, *lo* and *gli*, the ancients wrote separately thus, *de i*, *a i*, *da i*, *de la*, *a la*, *da la*, *de le*, *a le*, *da le*, *de lo*, *a lo*, *da lo*, *de gli*, *a gli*, *da gli*, which ought carefully to be avoided, as the great Grammarian Buommattei properly says in his book, intitled, DELLA LINGUA TOSCANNA, at page 313, chap. 18, and now they are wrote together, doubling the letter *l* in those Articles where the letter *l* is to be found, except in *gli*, as hath been already observed in the declension of the Articles.

Whenever the English Preposition *with*, which in Italian signifies *con*, is followed by the Article *the*, as *with the*, according to the moderns, we join the Preposition with the Article, and by taking away or changing some Letters we make but one Word of both; so with regard to those Substan-

Substantives to which the Article *il* belongs, we say *col*; and to those to which *lo*, we say *collo*; and to the Article *la*, *colla*; the plural of *col* is *coi*; of *collo* is *cogli*, of *colla* is *colle*, as may be seen in the following examples.

EXAMPLE.

with the book,	<i>col libro</i> ;	not	<i>con il</i> , &c.
with the books,	<i>coi libri</i> ;	—	<i>con i</i>
with the study,	<i>collo studio</i> ;	—	<i>con lo</i>
with the studies,	<i>cogli studj</i> ;	—	<i>con gli</i>
with the lover,	<i>coll' amante</i>	—	<i>con l'</i>
with the lovers,	<i>cogli amanti</i> ;	—	<i>con gli</i>
with the lady,	<i>colla dama</i> ;	—	<i>con la</i>
with the ladies,	<i>colle dame</i> ;	—	<i>con le</i>
with the army	<i>coll' armata</i> ;	—	<i>con l'</i>
with the armies,	<i>calle armate</i> ;	—	<i>con le</i>

When the English Preposition *in* is followed by the Article *the*, as *in the*, it is expressed in Italian by *nel*, *nello*, *nella*, in the singular; and *nei*, *negli*, *nelle*, in the plural; according as the Article which the following Substantives require.

EXAMPLE.

in the garden,	<i>nel giardino</i> ;	not	<i>in il</i>
in the books,	<i>nei libri</i> ;	—	<i>in i</i>
in the looking-glass,	<i>nello specchio</i> ;	—	<i>in lo</i>
in the studies,	<i>negli studj</i> ;	—	<i>in gli</i>
in the silver	<i>nell' argento</i> ;	—	<i>in l'</i>
in the arguments,	<i>negli argomenti</i> ;	—	<i>in gli</i>
in the chamber,	<i>nella camera</i> ;	—	<i>in la</i>
in the chambers,	<i>nelle camere</i> ;	—	<i>in le</i>
in the soul,	<i>nell' anima</i> ;	—	<i>in l'</i>
in the souls,	<i>nelle anime</i> ;	—	<i>in le</i>

The

The same rule may be observed when the Article *the* in English is preceded by the Adverb upon, *su* in Italian; as upon the, *sul, sullo, sulla*, singular; *sui, or su i, su gli, sulle*, plural:

Ex. upon the carpet, *sul tappeto*;
 upon the carpets, *su i tappeti*;
 upon the instrument, *sullo strumento*;
 upon the instruments, *su gli strumenti*;
 upon the table, *sulla tavola*;
 upon the tables, *sulle tavole*.

But the English Preposition *in* often answers the same in Italian, and this generally happens when it is not followed by the Article *the* in English. Example, in him, *in lui*; in this, *in questo*; in Italy, *in Italia*; in France, *in Francia*; in school, *in scola*; in all the world, *in tutto 'l mondo*.

Some Grammarians have been greatly mistaken in dividing the Articles into Definite and Indefinite, affirming, that *il, lo, la*, are Definite Articles, and *di, a, da*, Indefinite (a Division of no sense at all) because the former as well as the latter may sometimes be used in a Definite and at other times in an Indefinite sense, as appears in several instances in our language; however, this is nothing to our purpose: But to be understood in a grammatical manner, I call the Articles *il, lo, la*, general Articles; and *di, a, da*, Articles of proper names; though the latter are often Prepositions, as I shall sometimes have occasion to observe.

Remember, that in making use of all the above Articles you are to take particular notice of the Substantives

stantives they are joined with, whether they require the General Article or that of the Proper Names, whether they be Masculine or Feminine, Singular or Plural, and how they begin, either with a Vowel or Consonant."

C H A P. III.

Of the Nouns.

ALL Nouns in Italian end with a Vowel, but chiefly in *a, e, o*, one may know their gender not only by the Articles placed before them, but also by their terminations.

It is a general rule that all the Substantives Masculine of the plural number end in *i*, the Feminine plural in *e*; and you will find very few exceptions in the following rules.

Of Nouns ending in a.

NOUNS ending in *a* are generally of the Feminine gender. Example, *dama*, a lady; *casa*, a house; *tavola*, a table; which becomes plural only by changing the last Letter of the above Singular into *e*. Example, *dame*, ladies; *case*, houses; *tavole*, tables, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

All Nouns ending in *ca* or *ga* in the Singular take an *b* in the Plural after the *c* and *g*, in order to avoid a harsh pronunciation. Example, *la fatica*, the labour; *le fatiche*, the labours; *la piaga*, the wound; *le piaghe*, the wounds, &c.

Nouns

Nouns ending in *a*, with an Accent over it (generally derived from the Latin termination in *tas*, and which in English commonly end in *ty*) preserve the same termination in the Plural as in the Singular; the number whereof is known by the Article, and they are always of the Feminine gender. Example, *la carità*, the charity; *le carità*, the charities; *la generosità*, the generosity; *le generosità*, the generosities; *la maestà*, the majesty; *le maestà*, the majesties, &c.

There are some proper names of men and dignities that are terminated in *a*, which by their etymology, namely, by their natural signification, are known to be of the Masculine gender. Example, *Luca*, Luke; *Enea*, Eneas; *Pittagora*, Pythagoras, &c.

The same may be said of *il papa*, the pope; *i papi*, the popes; *il poeta*, the poet; *i poeti*, the poets; *il duca*, the duke; *i duchi*, the dukes; *il profeta*, the prophet; *i profeti*, the prophets; *il monarca*, the monarch; *i monarchi*, the monarchs, &c. *tema*, theme; *sistema*, system; and *pianeta*, a planet; are of the Masculine gender; but when *tema* signifies fear, and *pianeta* the priest's cope, they are Feminine.

Of Nouns ending in *e*.

ALL Nouns whose Singular ends in *e*, either of the Masculine or Feminine gender, become Plural by changing the *e* into *i*. Example, *il padre*, the father; *i padri*, the fathers; *la madre*, the mother; *le madri*, the mothers; *il prencipe*, the

the prince; *i principi*, the princes: *la legge*, the law; *le leggi*, the laws, &c.

Note, Almost all Substantives which in Latin terminate in *io*, or *ion* in French or English, end in *ione* in Italian, and are always of the Feminine gender, and according to the above rule end in *i* in the plural number. Example, *la generazione*, the generation; *le generazioni*, the generations; *la derivazione*, the derivation; *le derivazioni*, the derivations; *la congratulazione*, the congratulation; *le congratulazioni*, the congratulations, &c.

EXCEPTION.

La moglie, the wife; makes *le mogli*, the wives; *buoi*, an ox; *buoi*, oxen; *mille*, a thousand; *mille*, thousands; and not *mogli*, *bai*, *milk*.

The five following Substantives terminate alike in both numbers. Example, *il Re*, the king; *i Re*, the kings; *la specie*, the kind; *le specie*, the kinds; *l'effigie*, the effigy; *le effigie*, the effigies; *la superficie*, the superfiice; *le superficie*, the superfiices; *la temperie*, the temperature; *le temperie*, the temperatures.

Genders of Nouns ending in *e*.

TO know the Genders of all Nouns ending in *e*, some whereof are Masculine and others Feminine, observe the following rules; all those ending in *ie* are Masculine; as *il fiume*, the river; *il costume*, the custom; *il verme*, the worm, &c.

Exception, *la fame*, the hunger; and *la speranza*, the hope; which are feminine.

All Nouns ending in *te* are Masculine, except *la madre*, the mother; *la polvere*, the dust; *la*

febre, the fever; and *la torre*, the tower; which are Feminine.

All those ending in *ore* are Masculine, as *il colore*, the colour; *lo splendore*, the splendor; *il fiore*, the flower; *il dolore*, the grief or pain, &c.

Nouns in *ente* are Masculine, as *il dente*, the tooth; *il serpente*, the serpent; *il ponente*, the west, &c. except *la gente*, the people; and *la mente*, the mind; which are Feminine.

Nouns ending in *onte* are Masculine, as *il ponte*, the bridge; *il monte*, the mount, &c.

All the rest of the Italian Nouns ending in *e* are liable to several exceptions; but by the help of the Article before them, or of the Dictionary, where they are all marked with S. M. shewing the Substantives Masculine, and S. F. the Substantives Feminine, and by constant practice, you will find no great difficulty.

The following Nouns are of both Genders:

- il* or *la carcere*, the prison;
- il* *la fante*, the servant;
- il* *la fine*, the end;
- il* *la fronte*, the forehead;
- il* *la fonte*, the fountain;
- il* *la fune*, the rope;
- il* *la lepre*, the hare;
- il* *la consorte*, espouse, he or she.

Of Nouns ending in *i*.

NOUNS ending in *i* are very few in Italian, and in the plural they do not change their terminations; their Gender and Number are known by the

the Article placed before them; as in the examples following.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>il dì</i> , the day;	<i>i dì</i> , the days;
<i>il lunedì</i> , the monday;	<i>i lunedì</i> , the mondays;
<i>il martedì</i> , the tuesday;	<i>i martedì</i> , the tuesdays;
<i>il mercoledì</i> , the wednesday;	<i>i mercoledì</i> , the wednesdays;
<i>il giovedì</i> , the thursday;	<i>i giovedì</i> , the thursdays;
<i>il venerdì</i> , the friday;	<i>i venerdì</i> , the fridays;
<i>la diocesi</i> , the diocess;	<i>le diocesi</i> , the diocesses;
<i>il barbagianni</i> , the owl;	<i>i barbagianni</i> , the owls;
<i>l'eclissi</i> , the eclipse;	<i>le eclissi</i> , the eclipses;
<i>l'estasi</i> , the extacy;	<i>le estasi</i> , the extasies;
<i>l'enfasi</i> , the emphasis;	<i>le enfasi</i> , the emphases;
<i>la metamorfosi</i> , the meta-	<i>le metamorfosi</i> , the meta-
morphosis;	morphoses;
<i>l'iri</i> , the rainbow;	<i>le iri</i> , the rainbows;
<i>il or la pari</i> , the equal;	<i>i or le pari</i> , the equals.

There are likewise some proper names ending in *i*. Example, *Giovanni*, John; *Luigi*, Lewis; *Napoli*, Naples; *Parigi*, Paris; *Tamigi*, the Thames: Also some others that are names of families. Example, *Medici*, *Frafi*, *Galli*, &c. and some cardinal numbers, as *dieci*, ten; *undici*, eleven, &c.

Of Nouns ending in o.

ALL Nouns ending in this Letter are Masculine, and change the *o* into *i* in the Plural. Example, *il libro*, the book; *i libri*, the books; *l'anno*, the year; *gli anni*, the years, &c. except *mano*, a hand, which is Feminine, and makes the

the Plural in *i*, as *la mano*, the hand; *le mani*, the hands.

Uomo, a man; takes a Syllable more in the Plural and makes *uomini*, men; partaking of the Latin increase, as *homo*, *homines*.

All the Substantives, which in Italian end in *aro*, may also end in *ajo*, as *libraro* or *librajo*, a bookseller; *calzolaro* or *calzolajo*, a shoemaker; &c. the most part of them are names of trade, which, in forming their Plural, if they are terminated in *aro*, change the last Letter into *i*, according to the general rule, as *librari*, *calzolari*; but if ending in *ajo*, we must take away the last Syllable which is *jo*, and put only the vowel *i*, as *librajo*, *librai*, booksellers; *calzolajo*, *calzolari*, shoemakers, &c. Also some Nouns ending in *iero* may end in *iere*, which is a better termination than the former. Example, *barbiero* or *barbiere*, a barber; *cavaliero* or *cavaliere*, a knight; *pensiero* or *pensiere*, a thought, &c.

Some Substantives whose Singular ends in *o*, not only may end in *i* in the Plural (according to the general rule) but also in *a*, and become Feminine, though the Singular Number be Masculine, which last termination is more common amongst the moderns than the former.

Singular Masculine.

Plural Feminine.

Panella, the ring;
il braccio, the arm;
il budello, the gut;
il calcagno, the heel;

le anella.
le braccia.
le budella.
le calcagna.

D

Singular

Singular Masculine.	Plural Feminine.
<i>il castello</i> , the castle;	<i>le castella</i> .
<i>il cerchio</i> , the hoop;	<i>le cerchia</i> .
<i>il ciglio</i> , the eye-brow;	<i>le ciglia</i> .
<i>il corno</i> , the horn;	<i>le corna</i> .
<i>il cuojo</i> , the leather;	<i>le cuoja</i> .
<i>il dito</i> , the finger;	<i>le dita</i> .
<i>il ditello</i> , the armpit;	<i>le ditella</i> .
<i>il filo</i> , the thread;	<i>le fila</i> .
<i>il fondamento</i> , the foundation;	<i>le fondamenta</i> .
<i>il fragmento</i> , the fragment;	<i>le fragmenta</i> .
<i>il ginocchio</i> , the knee;	<i>le ginocchia</i> .
<i>il grido</i> , the cry;	<i>le grida</i> .
<i>il guscio</i> , the shell;	<i>le guscia</i> .
<i>il labro</i> , the lip;	<i>le labra</i> .
<i>il legno</i> , the wood;	<i>le legna</i> .
<i>il lenzuolo</i> , the sheet;	<i>le lenzuola</i> .
<i>il mela</i> , the apple;	<i>le mela</i> .
<i>il membro</i> , the member;	<i>le membra</i> .
<i>il migliajo</i> , the thousand;	<i>le migliaja</i> .
<i>il miglio</i> , the mile;	<i>le miglia</i> .
<i>il mulino</i> , a mill;	<i>le mulina</i> .
<i>il muro</i> , the wall;	<i>le mura</i> .
<i>l'orecchio</i> , the ear;	<i>le orecchia</i> .
<i>l'osso</i> , the bone;	<i>le ossa</i> .
<i>il paro</i> , } the couple,	<i>le para</i> .
<i>il pajo</i> , } or pair;	<i>le paja</i> .
<i>il pugno</i> , the fist;	<i>le pugna</i> .
<i>il quadrello</i> , the arrow;	<i>le quadrella</i> .
<i>il riso</i> , the laughter;	<i>le risa</i> .
<i>il rubio</i> , }	<i>le rubia</i> .
<i>lo staro</i> , } the bushel;	<i>le stara</i> .
<i>lo staio</i> , }	<i>le staja</i> .

Singular.

Singular Masculine.

Plural Feminine.

lo strido, an outcry ;*le strida*.*il vestigo*, the footstep ;*le vestigia*.*il vestimento*, the garment ;*le vestimenta*.*l'ovo*, the egg ;*le ova*.Of Nouns ending in *co* and *go*.

NOUNS of two Syllables ending in *co* or *go* take an *b* in the Plural after *c* and *g*, in order to avoid too harsh a pronunciation ; as *fico*, a fig ; *fichi*, figs ; *cieco*, blind ; *ciechi*, blinds ; *fuoco*, fire ; *fuochi*, fires ; *luogo*, a place ; *luoghi*, places, &c.

Except *Greco*, a Greek ; and *porco*, a hog ; which make *Greci* and *porci* in the Plural.

All the rest of the Nouns in *co* and *go*, of more than two Syllables, do not take the *b* in the Plural ; as *amico*, friend ; *amici*, friends ; *medico*, a physician ; *medici*, physicians ; *canonico*, a canon ; *canonici*, canons, &c.

Except in the following examples where *b* is admitted.

Singular.

Plural.

albergo, an inn ;*alberghi*.*antico*, ancient ;*anticbi*.*astrologo*, an astrologer ;*astrologbi* or *astrologi**beccafico*, a bird so called ;*beccafichi*.*bifolco*, a ploughman ;*bifolcbi*.*castigo*, chastisement ;*castighi*.*catasfalco*, a scaffold ;*catasfalcbi*.

Singular.

Plural.

catalogo, a catalogue;
chirurgo, a surgeon;
dialogo, a dialogue;
equivoco, equivocal;
Fiamingo, a Fleming;
impiego, employment;
manico, a handle;
meccanico, mechanic;
obbligo, obligation;
prodigo, prodigal;
reciproco, reciprocal;
siniscalco, a sewer;
Tedesco, a German;
traffico, traffic;
ub briaco, a drunkard;

cataloghi.
chirurgi.
dialoghi.
equivocchi.
Fiaminghi.
impieghi.
manichi.
mecanichi.
obbligati.
prodighi.
reciprochi.
siniscalchi.
Tedeschi.
traffichi.
ubbriachi.

Of Nouns ending in *io*.

WHENEVER these two Letters make a Diphthong, that is to say one Syllable, such Nouns become Plural by taking away the final *o*. Example, *figlio*, a son; *figli*, sons; *bacio*, a kiss; *baci*, kisses; *occhio*, an eye; *occhi*, eyes; *raggio*, a sun-beam; *raggi*, sun-beams, &c.

All Nouns ending in *cio*, *chio*, *gio*, and *glio*, generally make one Syllable of *io*.

But when *io* makes two Syllables, we are obliged, according to the general rule, to change the *o* into *i* in the Plural number. Example, *studio*, study; *studii*, studies; *incendio*, a great fire;

fire; *incendii*, great fires; *principio*, beginning; *principii*, beginnings; *tempio*, temple; *tempii*, temples, &c.

“*Note*, All the moderns who write with any taste, according to the opinion of BARISONI and BUOMMATTEI, instead of using the two Vowel *ii*'s at the end of such Substantives in the Plural number, write them only with an *j* Consonant, as *studj*, *incendj*, *principj*, *tempj*; and it is only by the *j* Consonant that we know the difference in some words, that (if wrote with *i* Vowel) would have quite a different signification, as *principi*, princes; *tempi*, times, &c.”

Of Nouns ending in *ù*.

ALL Nouns ending in *ù* have an Accent over it, and keep the same termination in the Plural as in the Singular, and are of the Feminine gender; the Number whereof is known by the Article, like those Substantives I have mentioned ending in *à*, and are the following :

Singular.	Plural.
<i>la gioventù</i> , the youth;	<i>le gioventù</i> .
<i>la grù</i> , the crane;	<i>le grù</i> .
<i>la servitù</i> , the servitude;	<i>le servitù</i> .
<i>la schiavitù</i> , the slavery;	<i>le schiavitù</i> .
<i>la tribù</i> , the tribe;	<i>le tribù</i> .
<i>la virtù</i> , the virtue;	<i>le virtù</i> .

Except *Gesù*, Jesus; and *Perù*, the province of Peru; that are of the Masculine Gender, and by being Proper Names have no Plural.

*The declension of the Substantives, with their
respective Articles.*

IN Italian, as in English, the Substantives never alter their terminations but only from the Singular into the Plural, except in some of them already mentioned; and it is by the Articles placed before them that they are declined, which shew their Gender, Number, and Case.

A Noun Substantive of the Masculine gender, beginning with a Consonant, is declined thus:

Sing. Nominative,	<i>il libro</i> , the book.
Genitive,	<i>del libro</i> , of the book.
Dative,	<i>al libro</i> , to the book.
Ablative,	<i>dal libro</i> , from the book.
Plur. Nominative,	<i>i libri</i> , the books.
Genitive,	<i>dei</i> or <i>de' libri</i> , of the books.
Dative,	<i>ai</i> or <i>a' libri</i> , to the books.
Ablative,	<i>dai</i> or <i>da' libri</i> , from the books.

A Noun of the Masculine gender, beginning with an *s*, followed by another Consonant, is thus declined :

Sing. Nominative,	<i>lo studio</i> , the study.
Genitive,	<i>dello studio</i> , of the study.
Dative,	<i>allo studio</i> , to the study.
Ablative,	<i>dallo studio</i> , from the study.
Plur. Nominative,	<i>gli studj</i> , the studies.
Genitive,	<i>degli studj</i> , of the studies.
Dative,	<i>agli studj</i> , to the studies.
Ablative,	<i>dagli studj</i> , from the studies.

A Noun of the Feminine gender, beginning with a Consonant, is thus declined :

Sing. Nominative,	<i>la casa</i> , the house.
Genitive,	<i>della casa</i> , of the house.
Dative,	<i>alla casa</i> , to the house.
Ablative,	<i>dalla casa</i> , from the house.
Plur. Nominative,	<i>le case</i> , the houses.
Genitive,	<i>delle case</i> , of the houses.
Dative,	<i>alle case</i> , to the houses.
Ablative,	<i>dalle case</i> , from the houses.

A Noun of the Masculine gender, beginning with a Vowel, the Article suffers no elision in the Plural, and is thus declined :

Sing. Nominative,	<i>l'amore</i> , the love.
Genitive,	<i>dell' amore</i> , of the love.
Dative,	<i>all' amore</i> , to the love.
Ablative,	<i>dall' amore</i> , from the love.
Plur. Nominative,	<i>gli amori</i> , the loves.
Genitive,	<i>degli amori</i> , of the loves.
Dative,	<i>agli amori</i> , to the loves.
Ablative,	<i>dagli amori</i> , from the loves.

Except when such Masculine Substantive begins with an *i*, then the Article Plural must be abridged as well as the Singular. Ex. *l'idolo*, the idol ; *gl' idoli*, the idols ; *l'inganno*, the deceit ; *gl' inganni*, the deceits ; *l'imperatore*, the emperor ; *gl' imperatori*, the emperors ; &c.

Nouns ending in *a* of the Masculine gender have their Plural in *i* ; as *il papa*, the pope ; *i papi*,

the popes; *il duca*, the duke; *i duchi*, the dukes; *il poeta*, the poet; *i poeti*, the poets; *il monarca*, the monarch; *i monarchi*, the monarchs, &c.

A Noun of the Feminine gender, beginning with a Vowel, the Article suffers no elision in the Plural, and is declined thus:

Sing. Nominative,	<i>l'anima</i> , the soul.
Genitive,	<i>dell' anima</i> , of the soul.
Dative,	<i>all' anima</i> , to the soul.
Ablative,	<i>dall' anima</i> , from the soul.
Plur. Nominative,	<i>le anime</i> , the souls.
Genitive,	<i>delle anime</i> , of the souls.
Dative,	<i>alle anime</i> , to the souls.
Ablative,	<i>dalle anime</i> , from the souls.

Except when such Substantives begin with an *e*, then the Article suffers an elision in the Plural as well as in the Singular number. Example, *l'eminenza*, the eminency; *l'eminenze*, the eminencies; *l'esperienza*, the experience; *l'esperienze*, the experiencies, &c. the Plural whereof is known by their terminations. But if a Substantive feminine that begins with an *e* has the same termination in the Plural as in the Singular, then the Article Plural is not abridged; otherwise we could not so well ascertain of what Number it was, if it was not for the Article which shews the difference. Example, *l'età*, the age; *le età*, the ages; *l'equità*, the equity; *le equità*, the equities; *l'effigie*, the effigy; *le effigie*, the effigies, &c. of which sort of Substantives there are very few in the Italian language.

A Noun ending in *à* with an Accent over it, is thus declined :

Sing. Nominative,	<i>la carità</i> , the charity.
Genitive,	<i>della carità</i> , of the charity.
Dative,	<i>alla carità</i> , to the charity.
Ablative,	<i>dalla carità</i> , from the charity.
Plur. Nominative,	<i>le carità</i> , the charities.
Genitive,	<i>delle carità</i> , of the charities.
Dative,	<i>alle carità</i> , to the charities.
Ablative,	<i>dalle carità</i> , from the charities.

A Noun ending in *ù* with an Accent, is thus declined :

Sing. Nominative,	<i>la virtù</i> , the virtue.
Genitive,	<i>della virtù</i> , of the virtue.
Dative,	<i>alla virtù</i> , to the virtue.
Ablative,	<i>dalla virtù</i> , from the virtue.
Plur. Nominative,	<i>le virtù</i> , the virtues.
Genitive,	<i>delle virtù</i> , of the virtues.
Dative,	<i>alle virtù</i> , to the virtues.
Ablative,	<i>dalle virtù</i> , from the virtues.

The Plural termination in *e* belongs only to Substantives Feminine, but there are some of these which end in *e* in the Singular, yet, that they may not terminate alike in both Numbers, they always change the *e* into *i* in the Plural, though the Article still keeps the general rule. Example, *la madre*, the mother ; *le madri*, the mothers ; *la corte*, the court ; *le corti*, the courts ; *la legge*, the law ; *le leggi*, the laws, &c.

There

There are several Substantives feminine that begin with an *s*, followed by another Consonant, which in Italian generally end in *a*, and consequently are not declined with the Article *lo* but with *la*. Example, *la strada*, the street; *la spada*, the sword; *la statua*, the statue; *la stella*, the star, &c. except *lo stratagemma*, the stratagem, which is Masculine.

We must not omit some Substantives, which from Masculine become Feminine by changing their last letter into *essa*.

E X A M P L E.

Masculine.

Principe, a Prince.
Duca, a Duke.
Conte, a Count.
Barone, a Baron.
Poeta, a Poet.
Profeta, a Prophet.

Feminine.

Principessa, a Princess.
Duchessa, a Duchess.
Contessa, a Countess.
Baronessa, a Baroness.
Poetessa, a Poetess.
Profetessa, a Prophetess.

There are others that change their Masculine termination of *tore* into *trice* for the Feminine, following the analogy of the Latin Ablative.

E X A M P L E.

Masculine.

Imperatore, Emperor.
Elettore, Elector.
Genitore, Father.
Esecutore, Executor.
Protettore, Protector or Patron.

Feminine.

Imperatrice, Empress.
Elettrice, Electress.
Genitrice, Mother.
Esecutrice, Executrix.
Protettrice, Protectress or Patroness.

Declension

Declension of Proper Names.

ALL Proper Names of Men, Women, Cities or Villages, and of some Islands, beginning with a Consonant, are thus declined :

Singular.	Singular.
N. <i>Pietro</i> , Peter.	N. <i>Maria</i> , Mary.
G. <i>di Pietro</i> , of Peter.	G. <i>di Maria</i> , of Mary.
D. <i>a Pietro</i> , to Peter.	D. <i>a Maria</i> , to Mary.
Ac. <i>Pietro</i> , Peter.	Ac. <i>Maria</i> .
A. <i>da Pietro</i> , from Peter.	A. <i>da Maria</i> , from Mary.

Singular.	Singular.
N. <i>Londra</i> , London.	N. <i>Parigi</i> , Paris.
G. <i>di Londra</i> , of London.	G. <i>di Parigi</i> , of Paris.
D. <i>a Londra</i> , to London.	D. <i>a Parigi</i> , to Paris.
Ac. <i>Londra</i> , London.	Ac. <i>Parigi</i> , Paris.
A. <i>da Londra</i> , from London.	A. <i>da Parigi</i> , from Paris.

Singular.	
Nominative,	<i>Malta</i> , the Island of Malta.
Genitive,	<i>di Malta</i> , of the Island of Malta.
Dative,	<i>a Malta</i> , to the Island of Malta.
Accusative,	<i>Malta</i> , the Island of Malta.
Ablative,	<i>da Malta</i> , from the Island of Malta.

When such Proper Names begin with a Vowel the *i* and *a* of the Articles *di* and *da* are cut off, and we put an Apostrophe in their stead, and add a *d* to the Article *a*, and decline thus :

Singular.	Singular.
N. <i>Antonio</i> , Anthony.	N. <i>Anna</i> , Anne.
G. <i>d' Antonio</i> , of Anthony.	G. <i>d' Anna</i> , of Anne.
D. <i>ad Antonio</i> , to Anthony.	D. <i>ad Anna</i> , to Anne.
Ac. <i>Antonio</i> , Anthony.	Ac. <i>Anna</i> , Anne.
A. <i>d' Antonio</i> , from Anthony.	A. <i>d' Anna</i> , from Anne.

Some

44 THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

Some authors do not abridge the Article of the Ablative Case in such Substantives, but say, *da Antonio, da Anna*, which is no bad Italian.

The four parts of the World, names of Kingdoms, Provinces and Mountains, may be declined either with the General Articles *il* or *la*, according to their Gender, or with the Articles of Proper Names *di, a, da*.

E X A M P L E.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>Piemonte</i> , or <i>il Piemonte</i> , Piemont.
Gen.	<i>di Piemonte</i> , or <i>del Piemonte</i> , of Piemont.
Dat.	<i>a Piemonte</i> , or <i>al Piemonte</i> , to Piemont.
Accus.	<i>Piemonte</i> , or <i>il Piemonte</i> , Piemont.
Ablat.	<i>da Piemonte</i> , or <i>dal Piemonte</i> , from Piemont.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>Spagna</i> , or <i>la Spagna</i> , Spain.
Gen.	<i>di Spagna</i> , or <i>della Spagna</i> , of Spain.
Dat.	<i>a Spagna</i> , or <i>alla Spagna</i> , to Spain.
Accus.	<i>Spagna</i> , or <i>la Spagna</i> , Spain.
Ablat.	<i>da Spagna</i> , or <i>dalla Spagna</i> , from Spain.

In the same manner may be declined *Vesuvio*, or *il Vesuvio*, the Mount Vesuvius; *Romagna*, or *la Romagna*, the State of Rome, &c.

When such Substantives begin with a Vowel, we take away the final Vowel of the Article thro' all the Cases, according to the General Rule. Example, *Africa* or *l'Africa*, Africa; *Inghilterra* or *l'Inghilterra*, England; *Italia* or *l'Italia*, Italy; *Olanda* or *l'Olanda*, Holland, &c.

All

All Proper Names of Seas and Rivers are always declined with the Articles *il* or *la*, according to their Gender; as,

Singular.

Nom. *il Mediterraneo*, the Mediterranean.

Gen. *del Mediterraneo*, of the Mediterranean.

Dat. *al Mediterraneo*, to the Mediterranean.

Accus. *il Mediterraneo*, the Mediterranean.

Ablat. *dal Mediterraneo*, from the Mediterranean.

Singular.

Nom. *il Tamigi*, the Thames.

Gen. *del Tamigi*, of the Thames.

Dat. *al Tamigi*, to the Thames.

Accus. *il Tamigi*, the Thames.

Ablat. *dal Tamigi*, from the Thames.

Those that begin with a Vowel are declined according to the General Rule. As, *l'Oceano*, the Ocean; *l'Adriatico*, the Adriatic Sea.

It is natural for every one to know that all Proper Names have no Plural; and some which are naturally Plural have no Singular; as *le Alpi*, the Alps; *i Pirenei*, the Pirenean Mountains.

THE declension of all Substantives and their Accidents, whether Masculine or Feminine, Singular or Plural, being known, I shall now take notice of the several distinctions of Nouns.

Of the Figure and Species of Nouns.

NOUNS are divided into *Substantive* and *Adjective*; and these Substantives into *Proper* and *Appellative*. Proper Nouns are those which are determined and belong only to the Person or Thing named;

named; as *Pietro*, Peter; *Maria*, Mary; *Londra*, London; *Roma*, Rome; *Germania*, Germany; *Italia*, Italy, &c.

Nouns Appellative are those which are indeterminate, and such as may be indifferently applied to all things of the same kind. Example, *città*, city; *casa*, a house; *regno*, a kingdom; *fiume*, a river; *palazzo*, a palace; *sedia*, a chair, &c.

Nouns are likewise divided into Simple and Compound, Primitive and Derivative, Collective, Equivocal and Synonymous; and also in Augmentatives, Diminutives and Numerals.

Simple Nouns are those of only one word; as *giusto*, just; *bene*, well; *merito*, merit.

Compound Nouns are those which are joined with a Preposition or other word before it, and both which make together but one word, and they have either a contrary or different signification from the Simple. Example, *ingiusto*, unjust; *benemerito*, deserving; the former whereof we see is compounded of *in* and *giusto*, and the latter of *bene*, well, and *merito*, merit.

Primitive Nouns are absolute and independent; as *terra*, earth; *uomo*, man; *città*, city, &c.

Derivative Nouns are those which are not absolute but dependent, having their Derivation from the Primitive; as *terreno*, earthly; *umano*, humane; *cittadino*, a citizen, &c.

Collective Nouns are those which in the Singular Number signify a multitude. Example, *popolo*, people; *compagnia*, company; *esercito*, an army; *nazione*, a nation, &c.

Equivocal Nouns are such as are spelt alike, but have more than one signification. Example, *tema*, a theme; *tema*, fear; *carico*, load; *carico*, charge; *canto*, singing; *canto*, the side, &c. There are but few of these in the Italian language; and the sense of the sentence will lead you into the true signification of such Substantives.

Synonymous Nouns are such words as signify the same thing. Example, *la via* or *il camina*, the way; *timore* or *paura*, fear, &c.

Of Augmentation and Diminution of Nouns.

THE Italians have this peculiarity in their language, that by adding a Syllable to the Nouns it increases or diminishes their signification, for which reason they are divided into *Augmentatives* and *Diminutives*.

Of the Augmentative.

AUGMENTATIVES formed from Nouns of the Masculine Gender change their last Vowel into *one* or *accio*; when of the Feminine into *ona* or *accia*.

Those terminated in *one* and *ona* increase the signification, and shew the thing to be greater or larger. Example, *cappello*, a hat; *cappellone*, a great hat; *casa*, a house; *casona*, a great house; but when they terminate in *accio* and *accia*, they signify a thing somewhat bad and despicable. Example, *cappellaccio*, a large clumsy hat; *casaccia*, an old ruinous house, &c.

Sometimes

Sometimes Nouns of the Feminine Gender may be increased by terminating in *one*, and by such termination become Masculine. Example, *un casone*, a great house; *un donnone*, a great woman; *un portone*, a great door or gate.

Note, It is impossible to form Augmentatives out of all the Nouns, because many of them naturally end in *one*, without being augmented, and are of different significations. Example, *basto*, a pack-saddle; *bastone*, a stick; *canto*, singing or side; *cantone*, a corner, &c.

There are other sorts of Augmentatives in *ame* and *aglia*. Those in *ame* signify a quantity or great number of any thing. Example, *pollo*, a pullet; *pollame*, all sorts of poultry; *uccello*, a bird; *uccellame*, a great many birds; *carne*, meat; *carname*, a large quantity of meat, &c. Those in *aglia* shew the thing vile and despicable. Example, *cane*, a dog; *canaglia*, the mob or dregs of the people; *gente*, people; *gentaglia*, the very common people.

Of Diminutives.

DIMINUTIVES lessen the signification by changing the last letter of the word they are formed from, and adding one or more Syllables to them.

There are two sorts of Diminutives, one of Kindness and Flattery, another of Mocking and Compassion.

Those of Kindness and Flattery terminate in *ino*, *etto* and *ello*, for the Masculine; and *ina*, *etta*,
I
ella,

ella, for the Feminine. Example, *povero*, poor; may make *poverino*, *poveretto* or *poverello*, a poor man; and *poverina*, *poveretta*, *poverella*, a poor woman.

Those of Compassion and Mockery terminate in *uccio*, *uzzo*, *icciuolo*, for the Masculine; and *uccia*, *uzza*, *icciuola*, for the Feminine; as from *uomo*, a man, is formed *uomuccio*, *uomuzzo*, *uomicciuolo*, a very poor man; and from *donna*, a woman, *donnuccia*, *donnuzza*, *donniciuola*, a poor ordinary woman.

Some Nouns form their Diminutives in *etto* or *ino* in the Masculine, and *etta* or *ina* in the Feminine. Example, from *libro*, a book, is formed *libretto* or *librettino*, a little book; from *caldara*, a kettle; *caldaretta* or *caldarina*, a small kettle; but *cane*, a dog; makes *cagnuolino*, a little pretty dog.

Some Nouns of the Feminine Gender ending in *a*, may form their Diminutives in *ino*, by which termination such Diminutives become also Masculine; as from *la tavola*, a table; is formed *il tavolino*, the little table; *la casa*, a house; *il casino*, a small house; *la camera*, a chamber; *il camerino*, the little chamber; *la beretta*, a man's cap; *il berettino*, a little cap, &c.

Note, There are several Diminutives which do not follow the above rules; as *bastone*, a stick; which makes *bastoncino*, a little stick; *porta*, a door; *porticella*, a little door, &c.

Of the Adjectives.

ADJECTIVES are those words serving to express the quality or accident of Substantives. Example, *buono*, good; *cattivo*, bad; *piccolo*, little; *brutto* ugly, &c.

All Adjectives in the Italian language must agree with the Substantives according to their Gender and Number; and may change from Singular into Plural, and from Masculine into Feminine, which are contrary to the English Adjectives, which always preserve the same termination.

Of the Termination of the Adjectives.

ADJECTIVES have three Terminations in the Singular Number, *o*, *a*, *e*, which mark their Gender thus, *o* for the Masculine, *a* for the Feminine, and *e* for both Genders.

All the Adjectives terminating in *o* make the Plural in *i*. Example, *bello*, *belli*, handsome; *generoso*, *generosi*, generous; *brutto*, *brutti*, ugly, &c.

Those in *a* make the Plural in *e*, as *bella*, *belle*, *generosa*, *generose*; *brutta*, *brutte*, &c.

Those in *e* may be joined either with a Substantive Masculine or Feminine but in the Plural end in *i*. Example, *felice*, happy; *potente*, powerful; *negligente*, negligent; &c. the Plural whereof is *felici*, *potenti*, *negligenti*; so that we may say, *un' uomo* or *una donna felice*, an happy man or woman; *due uomini* or *due donne felici*, two happy men or women, &c.

Note,

THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR. 51

Note, That many Adjectives taking an Article before them become Substantives. Example, *il dolce mi piace*, the sweet pleases me; *il buono è amato da tutti*, the good is loved by all.

From Adjectives, as well in Italian as other languages, are formed the degrees of Comparison according to the following rules.

Of the Comparison of Adjectives.

OBSERVE, First, That the natural signification of every Adjective (according to the degree of Comparison) is called Positive, as *bello*, handsome; *alto*, high; *nero*, black; and from thence may be formed either the Comparative or Superlative, as follow.

The Comparative is formed by placing the Adverb *più*, more, before the Positive, and serves to compare one Thing or Person with another. Example, *più bello*, Masc. Sing. *più bella*, Fem. Sing. *più belli*, Masc. Plur. *più belle*, Fem. Plur. handsomer; *più alto* or *più alta*, *più alti* or *più alte*, higher, &c. Example, *la figlia è più bella della madre*, the daughter is handsomer than the mother; *il Sole è più alto della Luna*, the Sun is higher than the Moon, &c.

But if we lessen the degree of Comparison, we put *meno* less, or *non sì* not so, before the Positive, and not *più*. Example, *meno bello* or *non sì bello*, less handsome or not so handsome; *meno alto*, less high; or *non sì alto*, not so high.

Note here, That *sì* is an abbreviation of *così*, so.

The Superlative, which is the highest degree, raises the signification as high as possible in explaining the high quality of the Substantive, and is formed from the Positive, by changing its last letter into *issimo* for the Masc. Sing. *issima* for the Fem. and *issimi* for the Masc. Plur. *issime* Fem. Plur. Example, *bellissimo, bellissima, bellissimi, bellissime*, extremely handsome; *altissimo, altissima, altissimi, altissime*, exceeding high, &c.

There is another kind of Superlative which does not raise the degree so high as the above, and is formed by placing the Adverb *molto*, very, before the Positive. Example, *molto bello*, very handsome; *molto buono*, very good, &c.

But when the Superlative is used in a Comparative sense, that is to say, in comparing any Person or Thing above the rest, then we put *il più* or *la più*, *i più* or *le più*, the most, before the Positive, changing the Article before *più* according to the Gender and Number of the Person or Thing compared.

Example, *Pietro è 'l più dotto di tutti*, Peter is the most learned of all; *la padrona è la più savia di tutta la famiglia*, the mistress is the wisest of all the family.

If the Superlative, in a Comparative sense, lessen the degree, that is to say, in comparing any Person or Thing in the lowest light; then we put *il meno*, *la meno*, *i meno*, *le meno*, the less, before the Positive. Example, *Giovanni è 'l meno dotto nella scola*, John is the least learned in the school;

Maria

Maria è la meno bella di tutte, Mary is the least handsome of all.

Note, We cannot say *il più* or *il meno dottissimo*, *la più* or *la meno bellissima*, but *il più* or *il meno dotto* *la più*, or *la meno bella*, more or less learned, more or less handsome.

EXCEPTION.

THE Italians have four Adjectives, whose Comparatives naturally end in *ore*, without making use of *più*, viz. *maggiore*, *minore*, *migliore*, *peggiore*; though the first two may be expressed by *più* before their Positives, as in the following examples.

POSITIVE.

grande, great or large;

piccolo, little or small;

buono, good;

cattivo, bad.

COMPARATIVE.

maggiore or *più grande*, greater or larger;

minore or *più piccolo*, less or smaller.

migliore or *meglio*, better;

peggiore or *peggio*, worse.

SUPERLATIVE.

il maggiore or *il più grande*, the greatest or largest;

il minore or *il più piccolo*, the least or smallest;

il migliore or *il meglio*, the best;

il peggiore or *il peggio*, the worst.

To which may be added *superiore*, superior; and *inferiore*, inferior.

Observe that the above Positives, Comparatives and Superlatives, which end in *e*, are of both Genders in the Singular, and their Plural is in *i* (as was

said in the Adjectives) but the others may change in their Gender and Number; except *meglio* and *peggio*, which always remain with the same termination in both Genders and in both Numbers; and it is only in the Superlative that their Gender and Number are known by the Article, as *il* or *la meglio*, *i* or *le meglio*; *il* or *la peggio*, *i* or *le peggio*.

Note, That when the above excepted Superlatives are not used in a Comparative sense, but only to shew the quality of the Substantive either extremely great or small, good or bad, they then follow the general rule, forming their Superlative from the Positive, by changing the last letter of the Adjective, and adding *issimo* or *issima*, *issimi* or *issime*. Example, *questo libro è grandissimo* or *piccolissimo*, *buontissimo*, or *cattivissimo*, this book is extremely large or small, good or bad; *quella donna è grandissima* or *piccolissima*, *buonissima* or *cattivissima*, that woman is extremely great or little, good or bad, &c. by which examples may be seen, that neither the book nor woman is compared with any other.

Remarks on the Comparatives.

“WHENEVER the Italians have a mind to
 “heighten the degrees of Comparison they make
 “use of *via più*, *assai più*, *molto più*, which in
 “English signifies, much more, or a great deal
 “more; but when they would lessen the Comparison, they use the words *via meno*, *assai meno*,
 “*molto meno*, which in English signifies a great
 “deal less, or much less. Example, *il sesso femminile è via più gentile del mascolino*, the female
 “sex

“sex is much more genteel than the masculine;
 “*ma il mascolino è molto più nobile del femminile*, but
 “the masculine is a great deal more noble than
 “the female.

“There can be no Comparison in English with-
 “out the word *than*, or *than the*, which are ex-
 “pressed in Italian sometimes by the Genitive
 “Case of the General Articles. Example, *del*,
 “*dello, della, dei* or *de'*, *degli, delle*, and some-
 “times by *di*, and at other times by *che*, accord-
 “ing to the following rules.

“When the word *than*, which is after the Com-
 “parative in English, is followed by a Noun or
 “Pronoun, which in Italian is declined with one
 “of the General Articles, and answers to *than*
 “*the* in English, it is expressed by the Genitive
 “Case of that Italian Article which belongs to the
 “above Noun or Pronoun according to the Ge-
 “neral Rules; that is to say, if the Article *il*, in
 “its Nominative, belongs to a Noun, *than the* is
 “expressed by *del*; if *lo*, it is expressed by *dello*;
 “if *la*, by *della*; and in the Plural, if *i*, by *dei*
 “or *de'*, &c.

EXAMPLE.

<i>più chiaro del Sole,</i>	clearer than the Sun.
<i>più bianco della neve,</i>	whiter than the snow.
<i>più dotto dello scolare,</i>	more learned than the scholar
<i>più lunghi dei giorni,</i>	longer than the days.
<i>più belle delle stelle,</i>	fairer than the stars.
<i>più chiari degli specchi,</i>	clearer than the glasses.
<i>più grande del mio libro,</i>	bigger than my book.
<i>più larga della mia mano,</i>	bigger than my hand.
<i>più ricchi de' miei parenti,</i>	richer than my relations.

“ But when the word *than* is followed by a
 “ Noun or Pronoun, which in Italian is declined
 “ by the Article *di*, it is expressed by the same *di*. ”

E X A M P L E.

più dotto di Pietro, more learned than Peter.
più stimato di me, more esteemed than me,
più grande di questo, bigger than this.
più piccolo di quello, smaller than that.

In the above example the word *than* may also be expressed by *che*, as *più dotto che Pietro*, &c.

“ When the word *than* is followed by an Ad-
 “ jective or Adverb, it is always expressed by *che*
 “ in Italian. ”

E X A M P L E.

è più grazioso che bello, is more graceful than handsome
è più debole che forte, is more weak than strong.
è meglio oggi che dimane, is better to-day than to-morrow
è meglio poco che niente, is better little than nothing.

“ When the Comparison is made between two
 “ Actions, the word *than* is expressed by *che non*,
 “ but as such sentences literally translated from
 “ the Italian would make no sense in English, by
 “ reason of the negative word *non* coming after
 “ *che*, we must refer you to the propriety of the
 “ Italian idiom, which, in this respect, is the
 “ same as in the French. ”

E X A M P L E.

Intendo più che non parlo,
 I understand more than I can speak,
Beve più che non mangia,
 he drinks more than he eats.

Except

“ Except when the Verbs of the sentence are both
 “ Infinitives, then we do not use the negation *non*,
 “ but only *che*,

E X A M P L E.

è meglio morire che offendere Iddio,
 'tis better to die than to offend God,
è meglio studiare che stare ozioso,
 'tis better to study than to be idle.
è meglio morire che perder la fama,
 'tis better to die than lose one's reputation.

“ When a Comparison is made in English by
 “ the Adverbs *as, as much as, so, so as, or like,*
 “ they are expressed in Italian by *quanto, come,* and
 “ by *che,*

E X A M P L E.

voi siete bello quanto lui, or come lui,
 you are as handsome as he.
ho forza quanto voi, or che voi,
 I have strength as well as you.
ma non son sì potente quanto 'l Re or che il Re,
 but I am not so powerful as the king.

Of Numerical Nouns.

NUMERICAL Nouns are divided into Cardinal and Ordinal, as follows: X

CARDINAL NUMBERS.				ORDINAL NUMBERS.			
<i>un</i>	}						
<i>uno</i>							
<i>una</i>				1	<i>primo</i>		first
<i>un'</i>							
<i>due</i>		—	—	2	<i>secondo</i>	—	second
<i>tre</i>		—	—	3	<i>terzo</i>	—	third
<i>quattro</i>		—	—	4	<i>quarto</i>	—	fourth
<i>cinque</i>		—	—	5	<i>quinto</i>	—	fifth
<i>sei</i>		—	—	6	<i>sesto</i>	—	sixth
<i>sette</i>		—	—	7	<i>settimo</i>	—	seventh
<i>otto</i>		—	—	8	<i>ottavo</i>	—	eighth
<i>nove</i>		—	—	9	<i>nono</i>	—	ninth
<i>dieci</i>		—	—	10	<i>decimo</i>	—	tenth

The Compound Numbers, from *ten* to *sixteen*, have the small Number before the larger; but in *seventeen*, *eighteen* and *nineteen*, the larger is before the smaller, which for that purpose I have marked with stars.

EXAMPLE.

ITALIAN.		ENGLISH.	
<i>undici</i>	11	<i>undecimo</i>	eleventh
<i>duodici</i>	12	<i>duodecimo</i>	twelfth
<i>tredecimi</i>	13	<i>terzodecimo</i>	thirteenth
<i>quattordici</i>	14	<i>quarto decimo</i>	fourteenth
<i>quindici</i>	15	<i>quinto decimo</i>	fifteenth
<i>sedici</i>	16	<i>sesto decimo</i>	sixteenth
* <i>diciassette</i>	17	* <i>decimo settimo</i>	seventeenth
* <i>diciotto</i>	18	* <i>decimo ottavo</i>	eighteenth
* <i>dicinove</i>	19	* <i>decimo nono</i>	nineteenth
<i>Venti</i> }	20	<i>ventesimo</i> or <i>vigesimo</i> }	twentieth
<i>vent' uno</i>	21	<i>ventesimo primo</i>	twenty-first
<i>venti due, &c.</i>	22	<i>ventesimo se-</i> <i>condo, &c.</i> }	twenty-second, &c.
<i>Trenta</i>	30	{ <i>trentesimo</i> or <i>trigesimo</i> }	thirtieth
<i>quaranta</i>	40	<i>quarantesimo</i>	fortieth
<i>cinquanta</i>	50	<i>cinquantesimo</i>	fiftieth
<i>sessanta</i>	60	<i>sessantesimo</i>	sixtieth
<i>settanta</i>	70	<i>settantesimo</i>	seventieth
<i>ottanta</i>	80	<i>ottantesimo</i>	eightieth
<i>novanta</i> or }	90	{ <i>novantesimo</i> <i>nonantesimo</i> }	ninetieth
<i>nonanta</i>			
<i>cento</i>	100	<i>centesimo</i>	hundredth
<i>due cento</i> or }	200	<i>ducentesimo</i>	two hundredth
<i>duecento, &c.</i>			
<i>mille</i>	1000	<i>millesimo</i>	a thousandth
<i>mille e due</i> }	1200	<i>l'ultimo</i> <i>l'ultima</i> <i>gli ultimi</i> <i>le ultime</i> }	the last
<i>cento, &c.</i>			

The following may be called Distributive Numbers.

<i>ambo</i>	}	- - -	both
<i>ambidue</i>			
<i>ambidue</i>			
<i>un paro</i> or	}	- - -	{ a pair or
<i>un pajo</i>			
<i>una decina</i>	- - -	- - -	half a score
<i>una dozzina</i>	- - -	- - -	a dozen
<i>una ventina</i>	- - -	- - -	a score
<i>una trentina</i>	- - -	- - -	{ a score and a half
			{ a thirtieth.
<i>una quarantina, &c.</i>			{ two scores
			{ a fortieth
<i>un centinajo</i>	}	- - -	{ five score
<i>un centinajo</i>			
<i>un migliaro</i>	}	- - -	{ a hundred
<i>un migliajo</i>			
		- - -	a thousand

Remarks on the Numbers.

“ *UN* is always used before a Masculine Noun beginning with a Consonant, as *un libro*, a book; *un nobile*, a nobleman.

“ *Uno* is used before a Masculine Noun beginning with an *s* followed by a Consonant. Example, *uno scolaro*, a scholar; *uno scultore*, a sculpture.

“ *Una* is always used before a Feminine Noun beginning with a Consonant, as *una dama*, a lady; *una pittura*, a picture.

“ *Un'* (with an Apostrophe) is used before a Masculine or Feminine Noun beginning with a Vowel. Example, *un' uomo*, a man; *un' anima*, a soul.

“ *Due*,

“ *Due, tre, quattro, cinque, &c.* are never abridged, and serve both Masculine and Feminine.
 “ Example, *due fratelli*, two brothers; *due sorelle*,
 “ two sisters; though one may sometimes find in
 “ ancient Authors *duo* or *duoi* for the Masculine.

“ *Cento*, a hundred, always keeps the same termination as *cento, due cento, tre cento, &c.* not
 “ *due centi, tre centi, &c.* *mille* a thousand, makes
 “ *mila* in the Plural. Example, *due mila, cinque*
 “ *mila, &c.* *un milione*, a million, makes *due milioni, &c.*

“ *Note*, The Ordinal Numbers follow the same nature of Adjectives, changing their termination according to the Gender and Number of the Substantive they are joined with. Example,
 “ *il primo libro*, the first book; *i primi uomini*,
 “ the first men; *la prima regola*, the first rule;
 “ *le prime case*, the first houses, &c.

“ Observe, That when the Ordinal Number is preceeded by a Proper Name, the Article *the*, expressed in English, is suppressed in Italian.
 “ Example, Charles the first, *Carlo primo*; Lewis the fourteenth, *Luigi quartodecimo*; Sixtus the fifth, *Sisto quinto, &c.* and not *Carlo il primo, &c.*

“ *Ambo*, both, is made use of in both Genders, and always followed by the Articles *i, gli, or le*, in Italian. Example, *ambo i libri*, both books; *ambo gli occhi*, both eyes; *ambo le mani*, both hands; but when it is joined with *due* it changes the *o* into *i* in the Masculine, and into *e* in the Feminine, as *ambidue i fratelli*, both brothers;
 “ *ambidue*

62 THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

“ *ambedue le sorelle*, both sisters; instead of which
 “ some ancients said *amendue*. We never say
 “ eleven hundred or twelve hundred, &c. but a
 “ thousand and one hundred, *mile e cento*; a thou-
 “ sand and two hundred, *mille e due cento*, &c.

Rules for those who understand the Latin and French languages.

“ BEFORE I proceed to the Pronouns, I think
 “ proper, for the advantage of those who under-
 “ stand Latin and French, to give some rules,
 “ which though I cannot call General, yet they
 “ may be of service in the formation of Italian
 “ words out of those two languages, with a little
 “ variation, because the Italian is between both,
 “ though derived from the Latin.

“ A few of the following rules may be useful
 “ to shew you how to change some English Syl-
 “ lables into Italian, because there are several
 “ words in English also derived from the Latin.

For those who understand Latin.

“ I. THE letter *b* (as I said in its proper place)
 “ is not used in Italian in all the words where
 “ there is no equivocation.

“ II. *Ad*, in Latin or English words followed
 “ by a Consonant, as *adverbium*, *adversitas*, *ad-*
 “ *mirabilis*, &c. the *d* changes into another Con-
 “ sonant as that which follows it. Example,
 “ *avverbio*,

“ *avverbio*, adverb; *avversità*, adversity; *ammirabile*, admirable, &c.

“ III. *i* after *f* or *p*, as *flamma*, *fiore*, *pianta*, *pieno*, is changed into *i*, as *fiamma*, a flame; *fiore*, a flower; *pianta*, a plant; *pieno*, full.

“ IV. *et* sometimes is changed into two *tt*, and sometimes the *c* is suppressed, as for *dottor*, *ottavo*, *sanctuario*, we say *dottor*, *ottavo*, *sanctuario*, &c.

“ V. *pt* changes into two *tt*, as *apto* *atto*, &c.

“ VI. *pb* is changed into *f*, as *philosophus*, *phenix*, *philippus*, which make *filosofo*, *fenice*, *filippo*, &c.

“ VII. *x* is changed into *f*, sometimes into two *ff*, and sometimes into *c*. Example, *exactus*, *experientia*, *Alexander*, *excellencia*, which make *esatto*, exact; *esperienza*, experience; *Alessandro*, *Alexander*; *eccellenza*, excellency.

“ VIII. The Latin Ablative frequently makes the Italian Nominative, and particularly such as in the Latin Nominative end in *x*, in *or*, and in *tio*, as *imperatrice*, *meretrice*, *felice*, *calore*, *amore*, *tenore*, *generazione*, *derivazione*, *nazione*, &c. all which are entirely both Latin and Italian, except the three last, and like those that in Latin are wrote with a *t*, and in the modern Italian with *z*, as I said in the Pronunciation of the Syllables; page 6, and 12. the same are *lingua*, *via*, *sedia*, *padre*, *madre*, *onore*, *regno*, &c. all which are Latin Ablatives and Italian Nominatives.

64 THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

“ IX. The Latin Terminations in *antia* and
 “ *entia* change into *anza* and *enza* in the modern
 “ Italian, as for *petulantia*, *arrogantia*, *intelligentia*,
 “ *diligentia*, we say, *petulanza*, *arroganza*, *intel-*
 “ *ligenza*, *diligenza*, &c.

“ X. The Neutrum Nominative of the Latin
 “ change the Termination into *o*. Example,
 “ *tempus tempo*, *caput capo*, *sacerdotium sacer-*
 “ *dozio*, *cornu corno*, *homicidium omicidio*, *ma-*
 “ *trimonium matrimonio*, *collegium collegio*, *pre-*
 “ *mium premio*, &c.

“ XI. The Neutrum Nominative terminated
 “ in *en* reject their final letter in Italian, as *lumen*
 “ *lume*, *nomen nome*, *pronomén pronome*, *flumen*
 “ *fume*, *femen seme*, *volumen volume*, &c.

“ XII. Concerning the Verbs there are a great
 “ many Infinitives that are both Latin and Italian.
 “ Example, *amare*, *crédere*, *dormire*, *dolére*, *regnare*,
 “ *tenere*, *solére*, *sedére*, *léggere*, *cadére*, &c.

For those who understand the French language.

FROM the French Syllable *cha* we always
 take away the *b* in Italian thus, *ca*, which sounds
 in English like *kaw*; as in the French words
charbon, *charité*, *chasteté*, *chapon*, *charette*, *chandelle*,
chappeau, &c. in Italian we say *carbone*, *carità*,
castità, *cappone*, *carretta*, *candela*, *cappello*, &c.

TERMI-

TERMINATIONS.

<i>French.</i>	<i>Italian.</i>	<i>French words.</i>	<i>Italian words.</i>
ance makes	<i>anza</i> as	vigilance, &c.	<i>vigilanza</i> , &c.
ence	<i>enza</i>	diligence	<i>diligenza</i>
agne	<i>agna</i>	montagne	<i>montagna</i>
ogne	<i>ogna</i>	catalogne	<i>catalogna</i>
ie	<i>ia</i>	poesie	<i>poesia</i>
oire	<i>oria</i>	victoire	<i>vittoria</i>
té	<i>tà</i>	liberalité	<i>liberalità</i>
ure	<i>ura</i>	imposture	<i>impostura</i>
al	<i>ale</i>	cardinal	<i>cardinale</i>
able	<i>evole</i>	charitable	<i>caritatevole</i>
ant	<i>ante</i>	vigilant	<i>vigilante</i>
cur	<i>ore</i>	honneur	<i>onore</i>
ier	<i>iere</i>	cavalier	<i>cavaliere</i>
ion	<i>ione</i>	commission	<i>commissione</i>
<i>Adject. or Adv. in</i>			
ent	<i>ente</i>	eminent	<i>eminente</i>
on	<i>one</i>	baron	<i>barone</i>
ont	<i>onte</i>	front	<i>fronte</i>
<i>Names of Nations in</i>			
ois	<i>ese</i>	Anglois	<i>Inglese</i>
ulier	<i>olare</i>	particulier	<i>particolare</i>
age	<i>aggio</i>	equipage	<i>equipaggio</i>
ain	<i>ano</i>	main	<i>mano</i>
<i>Names of Nations in</i>			
ain	<i>ano</i>	Romain	<i>Romano</i>
aire	<i>ario</i>	temeraire	<i>temerario</i>
eau	<i>ello</i>	manteau	<i>mantello</i>
<i>Substantives in</i>			
ent	<i>ento</i>	compliment	<i>complimento</i>
eux	<i>oso</i>	genereux	<i>generoso</i>
in	<i>ino</i>	jardin	<i>giardino</i>
if	<i>ivo</i>	passif	<i>passivo</i>
é	<i>co</i>	porc	<i>porco</i>

66 THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

Of the French Termination of some Infinitives and Participles, and their manner of changing into Italian.

		Conjugations			
Parti- ciples.	I.	er	are	aimer, &c.	amare, &c.
	III.	ir	ire	partir, &c.	partire, &c.
	I.	é	ato	aimé, &c.	amato, &c.
	III.	i	ito	dormi, &c.	dormito, &c.

Note, The Termination of the French Infinitives and Participles of the Second Conjugation being quite irregular, cannot be properly made equivalent with that of the Verbs belonging to the Second Italian Conjugation in *ere*.

Besides the Propriety, there are always some irregularities and exceptions to be found in a language, and particularly between one another, though the Italian bears a great similitude to the French, not only with respect to words but also in the turn of phrases; yet there are several Italian words that have no manner of affinity either with the Latin or French languages, which hinder these Rules from being altogether general.

C H A P. IV.

Of Pronouns.

TH E Pronouns are a part of Speech so called because they are always used instead of Nouns, and are divided into seven, *viz.* *Personal, Conjunctive, Possessive, Demonstrative, Relative, Interrogative, and Indefinite.*

Of Personal Pronouns.

THE Personal Pronouns have Three Persons both in Singular and Plural :

Io, I, *noi*, we ; are the First Persons for both Masculine and Feminine.

Tu, thou ; *voi*, you or ye ; are the Second Persons for both Masculine and Feminine.

Egli or *lui*, he ; are the Third Persons Singular of the Masculine Gender. *Eglio* or *loro*, they ; are the Plural.

Ella or *lei*, she ; are the Third Persons Singular of the Feminine Gender. *Elleno* or *loro*, they ; are the Plural.

All these Personal Pronouns are declined with the Articles *di*, *a*, *da*.

Note, That all Substantives in general are of the Third Person, according to their Gender and Number, and are declined with the Articles which they require. Example, *il libro*, is Third Person Masculine Singular ; *i libri*, Third Person Masculine Plural ; *la casa*, is Third Person Feminine Singular ; *le case*, Third Person Feminine Plural, &c.

You will observe in the following Declension of Pronouns Personal, some little Words rank'd after all the Dative and Accusative Cases, as *mi*, *ci*, *ne*, &c. all which are properly called *Pronouns Conjunctive* (as you will better understand under the next head) and I have placed them among the Pronouns Personal, only to shew that they can be in no other Cases but in those two.

Declension of the Personal Pronouns.

FIRST PERSON.

Masculine and Feminine.

Sing. Nominative, *Io, I.*
 Genitive, *di me, of me.*
 Dative, *a me or mi, to me.*
 Accusative, *me or mi, me.*
 Ablative, *da me, from me.*

Plur. Nominative, *Noi, we.*

Genitive, *di noi, of us.*
 Dative, *a noi, or ci, ne, to us.*
 Accusative, *noi, or ci, ne, us.*
 Ablative, *da noi, from us.*

SECOND PERSON.

Masculine and Feminine.

Sing. Nominative, *Tu, thou.*
 Genitive, *di te, of thee.*
 Dative, *a te, or ti, to thee.*
 Accusative, *te, or ti, thee.*
 Ablative, *da te, from thee.*

Plur. Nominative, *Voi, you or ye.*

Genitive, *di voi, of you.*
 Dative, *a voi, or vi, to you.*
 Accusative, *voi, or vi, you.*
 Ablative, *da voi, from you.*

THIRD PERSON.

Masculine.

Sing. Nominative, *Egli or lui, he.*
 Genitive, *di lui, of him.*
 Dative, *a lui or gli, li, to him.*
 Accusative, *lui or lo, il, him.*
 Ablative, *da lui, from him.*

Plur. Nominative, *Eglino or loro, they.*

Genitive, *di loro, of them.*
 Dative, *a loro, to them.*
 Accusative, *loro, or gli, li, them.*
 Ablative, *da loro, from them.*

THIRD

THIRD PERSON.

Feminine.

Sing.	Nominative,	<i>Ella</i> , or <i>lei</i> , she.
	Genitive,	<i>di lei</i> , of her.
	Dative,	<i>a lei</i> , or <i>le</i> , to her.
	Accusative,	<i>lei</i> , or <i>la</i> , her.
	Ablative,	<i>da lei</i> , from her.
Plur.	Nominative,	<i>Elleno</i> , or <i>loro</i> , they.
	Genitive,	<i>di loro</i> , of them.
	Dative,	<i>a loro</i> , to them.
	Accusative,	<i>loro</i> , or <i>le</i> , them.
	Ablative,	<i>da loro</i> , from them.

se, one's self, is a Pronoun Personal of the Third Person, that serves indifferently for both Genders, and has no Nominative Case.

Gen.	<i>di se</i> , of one's self, himself, or herself.
Dat.	<i>a se</i> , or <i>si</i> , to one's self, &c.
Accus.	<i>se</i> , or <i>si</i> , one's self, &c.
Ablat.	<i>da se</i> , from one's self, &c.

In the Italian language, either for civility or duty towards a person, we very frequently make use of another Third Person, for both sexes in any polite company, which in the Singular is wrote only with two capital letters thus, V. S. and stands for *Vostra Signoria*, but is always pronounced as if both were but one word thus, *Vossignoria*, which is the general title we give in speaking to any private Lady or Gentleman; and take notice that the above compounded Word by itself is of the Feminine Gender, by reason of its termination in *a*, though we apply it to both sexes, and is thus declined :

THIRD PERSON.

Masculine and Feminine.

Sing. Nom. *V. S.* you Sir, Madam, or Miss.Gen. *di V. S.* of you, &c.Dat. *a V. S.* to you, &c.Acc. *V. S.* you, &c.Abl. *da V. S.* from you, &c.

The Plural of *V. S.* if Masc. is *loro Signori*, you Gentlemen; if Fem. *loro Signore*, you Ladies; or may be used also for both Genders, either *loro Signorie* or *le Signorie loro*.

Remarks on the Personal Pronouns.

" I. *LUI* the Third Person Masc. Sing. *lei* the Fem. and *loro* their Plur. for both Genders, are chiefly used in conversation; but *egli*, *eglino*, *ella*, *elleno*, are more elegant, and commonly to be met with in authors, some of whom make use of *ei* or *e'* for *egli*; also *desso*, *dessi*, *dessa*, *desse*, for *esso*, *essi*, *essa*, *esse*.

" II. *Egli* sometimes is no Personal Pronoun, but only a replete Particle in the Italian language. Example, *egli è vero*, it is true.

" III. *A loro*, which is the Dative Case of both the Third Persons Plural, is sometimes made use of without the Article *a*. Example, *promisi loro la mia protezione*, I promised them my protection.

" IV. We often follow the Latin analogy by taking away from a sentence the Pronoun Personal when it is the Nominative Case, the reason

“ reason of which (besides its elegance) is because
 “ of the different terminations of the Persons of
 “ Tenses through all the Italian Verbs. Example,
 “ *amo i miei figliuoli*, I love my children; *parlerò*
 “ *col Re*, I shall speak with the King. In which
 “ two examples (as you shall know when you are
 “ in the Verbs) you may observe that *amo* cannot
 “ be any other Person than the first Singular of
 “ the Indicative Mood Present Tense, and *parlerò*
 “ the first Singular of the Future in the same
 “ Mood.

“ V. Whenever a Pronoun Personal, as well
 “ as any other Noun, is the Nominative Case in
 “ a question, it goes after the Verb. Example,
 “ *parlate voi Italiano?* do you speak Italian?
 “ *portò Pietro la lettera?* did Peter bring the
 “ letter?

“ VI. Sometimes we find *esso* between the Con-
 “ junction *con*, with, and *noi*, *voi*, *lui*, *lei*, *loro*,
 “ in which cases it has no signification at all, but
 “ is used as a replete Particle, and only for ele-
 “ gance in our language. Example, *con esso noi*,
 “ with us; *con esso voi*, with you; *con esso lui*,
 “ with him; *con esso lei*, with her; *con esso loro*,
 “ with them.

*Of the Peculiarity of the Italian language, not
 only in Personal Pronouns, but also in some
 Nouns.*

“ THOUGH I am now remarking upon
 “ the Pronouns Personal, yet I think it may not
 “ be improper to introduce some rules relating

to the peculiarity of our language, not only in regard to them but also to some of the Nouns, which will make a better impression on the minds of Beginners here than if they were placed any where else.

Note then, As a peculiarity of the Italian (which at the same time is very elegant) that in Verbs of Motion, as *to go to*, or *come to*, if the Motion be made to a Person or Persons Masculine or Feminine, or if we make use of the Pronouns Personal, the Article of the Ablative Case is used instead of the Dative.

EXAMPLE.

I shall go	to him,	<i>anderò da lui,</i>	not a lui
	to her,	<i>da lei</i>	<i>a lei</i>
	to them,	<i>da loro</i>	<i>a loro</i>
	to the King,	<i>dal Re</i>	<i>al Re</i>
	to the Queen,	<i>dalla Regina</i>	<i>alla Regina</i>
	to the Princesses,	<i>dalle Principesse</i>	<i>alle Principesse</i>
	to the Bishop,	<i>dal Vescovo</i>	<i>al Vescovo</i>
	to the Merchants,	<i>dai Mercanti</i>	<i>ai Mercanti</i>
	to Mr N.	<i>dal Signor N.</i>	<i>al Signor N.</i>
	to Mrs N.	<i>dalla Signora N.</i>	<i>alla Signora N.</i>
	to Messrs N. N.	<i>dai Signori N. N.</i>	<i>ai Signori N. N.</i>
	to the Printer,	<i>dallo Stampatore</i>	<i>allo Stampatore</i>
	to my Bookseller,	<i>dal mio Libraro</i>	<i>al mio Libraro</i>
	to that Gentleman,	<i>da quel Signore</i>	<i>a quel Signore</i>
	to that Gentlewoman,	<i>da quella Signora</i>	<i>a quella Signora</i>

Come to me, *venite da me,* not *a me.*

to us, *da noi,* *a noi.*

to him, *da lui,* *a lui.*

to her, *da lei,* *a lei.*

If the above examples were to be literally translated from the Italian they would make no sense at all in English, therefore (as I said before)

“fore) we must always ascribe these to the peculiarity of the Italian idiom. But if the Motion is made to a Kingdom or Province, the Preposition *in* is used instead of the Article; but if to a City, Town, Village, or to any particular place, sometimes *in* and sometimes the Article of the Dative Case is made use of.

EXAMPLE.

I shall go	to France,	<i>anderò in Francia,</i>	not a <i>Francia,</i>
	to Germany,	<i>in Germania,</i>	not a <i>Germania.</i>
	to London,	<i>in Londra,</i>	or a <i>Londra.</i>
	to Paris,	<i>in Parigi,</i>	or a <i>Parigi.</i>
	to the Church,	<i>in Chiesa,</i>	or <i>alla Chiesa.</i>
	to the Court,	<i>in Corte,</i>	or <i>alla Corte.</i>
	into the Country,	<i>in Campagna,</i>	or <i>alla Campagna.</i>

Another Peculiarity of the Personal Pronouns in speaking to a second Person.

YOU have already observed that *tu* is the Second Person Singular for both Genders, *voi* the Second Plural also for both Genders, *lei* the Third Person Singular of the Feminine Gender, and likewise *V. S.* is a Third Person Singular used for both sexes; all which are to be used according to the following rules:

Tu, thou, is never made use of in any polite company, but only among the common or lower sort of people, or in speaking to one of them; though sometimes it is used by gentlemen and ladies with their equals in a free and familiar way.

Voi, you, which is Plural, is used for the Singular in speaking with a Person either equal or inferior

inferior to us, in the same manner as *vous* in the French language.

V. S. is used in speaking to a private gentleman or lady.

Lei is made use of to avoid the too frequent repetition of *V. S.* and is used in the same manner.

Observe, When the Second Person, either Singular or Plural, viz. *tu* or *voi*, is made use of in a sentence wherein is a Verb and an Adjective, the Verb must agree with such Personal Pronoun both in Number and Person, and the Adjective in Gender and Number with the Person that the Pronoun Personal stands instead of.

E X A M P L E.

Tu sei molto { *temerario*, Masc. } thou art very saucy.
 { *temeraria*, Fem. }

Voi siete molto { *bello*, Masc. } you are very handsome.
 { *bella*, Fem. }

But when you make use of *V. S.* or *lei*, in speaking to a Second Person, Masculine or Feminine, the Verb should always be in the Third Person Singular according to its Tense, and the Adjective in the Feminine Gender, because of the agreement it should have with *Signoria* or *lei*, each of which is a Third Person Feminine Singular.

E X A M P L E.

V. S. or *lei è molto generosa*, you are very generous.

Though at the same time we may put the Adjective in the Masculine Gender, saying *generoso*, if speaking to a gentleman, in particular where

a lady is in company, in order to avoid an equivocation; in which case the Adjective agrees with the Person Masculine we are talking to, and not with *Signoria* or *lei*.

As for the titles given in Italian, when speaking to a person of quality, they are all of the Feminine Gender and included under the same rule as *V. S.* So in speaking

To an Emperor or Empress *V. C. M.* stands for *Vostra Cesarea Maestà*, your Imperial Majesty.

To a King or Queen *V. R. M.* for *Vostra Real Maestà*, your Royal Majesty.

To a Prince or Princess of the blood, *V. A. R.* for *Vostra Altezza Reale*, your Royal Highness.

To an Italian Prince or Princess, not of the blood, *V. E.* for *Vostra*

To a Duke or Duchess, *Eccellenza*,
To a Marquis or Marchioness, your Excel-
To an Ambassador or Ambassatrix, lency.

To an Earl or Count, Baron, Knight, *V. S. Illustrissima*
and to all Noblemens sons, that for *Vossignoria*
have no title here in England, *Illustrissima*,
To a Countess, Baroness, &c. you most Illustrious.

Concerning other titles used in Italian in speaking to Monarchs, either spiritual or temporal, you will find them in the Second Part of this Grammar.

Of Pronouns Conjunctive.

ONE of the chiefest difficulties in learning the Italian language is about these Pronouns Conjunctive, which requires the greater diligence and attention,

tention, because of the different signification some of them often have, as well as a different position in a sentence; but not to confound the Learner's mind, I shall gradually explain and farther illustrate them by examples.

The Pronouns Conjunctive are those little words which you have already observed after the Dative and Accusative Cases of the Pronouns Personal.

They are twelve in all; *viz. mi, ci, ne, ti, vi, *gli, *li, *lo, *il, *le, *la, and si.*

Two things are chiefly to be considered in these Pronouns; namely, their Signification, and their Position in a sentence.

Their Signification.

AS to their Signification, it is the very same with that of the Dative and Accusative Cases of Pronouns Personal, instead of which they are made use of in a sentence, and with which they have a very great affinity, but with this difference, that those Pronouns Conjunctive of the First and Second Persons, both Singular and Plural, are always applied to a Person or Persons Masculine or Feminine; but those of the Third Person of both Gender and Number (which you observe marked with * star) may be related or applied either to a Person or Persons, or to a Thing or Things, according to the Gender and Number of the Persons or Things they are related to.

Some of these Pronouns Conjunctive may be equally used in both Cases, *viz. in the Dative and Accusative*; but the Verb shews to you in what

what Case they are in a sentence, and commonly have the following signification.

<i>mi</i> , instead of <i>a me</i> , to me ;	Dat.	} of the First Person Sing. for both Gend.
<i>mi</i> , instead of <i>me</i> , me ;	Acc.	
<i>ci</i> , or } instead of <i>a noi</i> , to us ;	Dat.	} of the First Person Plur. for both Gend.
<i>ne</i> , <i>ci</i> , or } instead of <i>noi</i> , us ;	Acc.	
<i>ti</i> , instead of <i>a te</i> , to thee ;	Dat.	} of the Second Person Sing. for both Gend.
<i>ti</i> , instead of <i>te</i> , thee ;	Acc.	
<i>vi</i> , instead of <i>a voi</i> , to you ;	Dat.	} of the Second Person Plur. for both Gend.
<i>vi</i> , instead of <i>voi</i> , you ;	Acc.	
<i>gli</i> , or } instead of <i>a lui</i> , to him, or to it ;	} Dat. Case of the Third Person Masc. Sing.	} viz. to any thing, Masc. Sing.
<i>li</i> , <i>gli</i> , or } instead of <i>loro</i> , them ; either for		
<i>li</i> , or } Persons or Things, Masc. Plur.	} Accus. of the Third Person Masc. Plur.	
<i>lo</i> , or } instead of <i>lui</i> , him, or to it ; viz.	} Accus. of the Third Person Masc. Sing.	} to any thing Masc. Sing.
<i>il</i> , <i>le</i> , instead of <i>a lei</i> , to her, or to it ;		
<i>le</i> , instead of <i>loro</i> , them ; either for	} Dat. of the Third Per- son Fem. Sing.	
Persons or Things, Fem. Plur.	} Accus. of the Third Person Fem. Plur.	
<i>la</i> , instead of <i>lei</i> , her, or it ; viz. any	} Accus. of the Third Person Fem. Sing.	
thing Fem. Sing.	} Person Fem. Sing.	
<i>fi</i> , which may be reckon'd among the Pronouns Conjunctive, signify one's self, himself, herself, or themselves.		

Their Position.

THE Pronouns Personal generally go after the Verbs in a sentence, but the above Pronouns Conjunctive may be used either before or after them.

They are called *Pronouns Conjunctive*, as being always joined with Verbs and placed before them (though a little separate) or incorporated at the

the end of them, as if the Verb and Pronoun Con-
junctive were but one word, as you may observe
in the Verbs *concedere*, to grant; and *vedere*, to
see; the first whereof requires an Accusative and
a Dative Case after it, *viz.* the thing granted, and
to whom it is granted; but the second Verb re-
quires no other Case after it than the Accusative,
viz. the Person or Thing that is seen; so that
the following examples will plainly demonstrate
that some phrases in English may be expressed in
three different ways in Italian; *viz.* at Numb. 1.
the Pronoun Personal comes after the Verb;
Numb. 2. the Pronoun Conjunctive is before the
Verb instead of the Personal after it; at Numb. 3.
the Pronoun Conjunctive is incorporated at the
end of the Verb.

E X A M P L E.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>Il Re concede a me tale grazia,</i> | } the King grants
me such a fa-
vour. |
| 2. <i>Il Re mi concede tale grazia,</i> | |
| 3. <i>Il Re concedemi tale grazia,</i> | |
| 1. <i>Dio vede me,</i> | } God sees me. |
| 2. <i>Dio mi vede,</i> | |
| 3. <i>Dio vedemi,</i> | |

Note, That

Numb. 1. is that which we call common Italian.

2. is better and more frequently used.

3. is more elegant than either.

I will here add four examples more wherein the
Pronouns Conjunctive, by being of the Third
Person, may be related or applied either to a Per-
son or Thing.

Example

Example of *gli* Dat. Case, applied to a Person.

Io diedi la lettera a lui,
Io gli diedi la lettera,
Io diedigli la lettera, } I did give him the letter.

Example of *gli* Dative, applied to a Thing.

Io aggiungo regole al libro, I add rules to the book.
Io gl' aggiungo regole, } I add rules to it, viz. to
Io aggiungogli regole, } the book.

Example of *lo* applied to a Person.

Io vedo lui,
Io lo vedo,
Io vedolo, } I see him.

Example of *lo* applied to a Thing Masc. Sing.

Io vedo il libro, I see the book.
Io lo vedo, } I see it, viz. the book.
Io vedolo, }

In like manner you may change all the Pronouns Conjunctive of the Third Person according to the Gender and Number of the Person or Thing they are related to, and according to the Case which the Verb requires them to be of in a sentence.

Remarks on the Pronouns Conjunctive.

“ THERE are six things chiefly to be considered in these Pronouns; and for the rest Practice will explain :

“ I. Whenever they come before a Verb beginning with a Vowel, the last letter of the Pronouns Conjunctive (which is a Vowel) is taken off and an Apostrophe is put in its stead. Example, *Io v' amo*, I love you; *il maestro m' insegna*, the master teaches me, &c.

“ II. Al-

“ II. Although I have said above that these
 “ Pronouns Conjunctive may go either before the
 “ Verbs, or be incorporated at the end of them,
 “ yet there is an exception to this rule ; viz. that
 “ if the Verb is an Imperative Tense or Infinite
 “ Mood, or a Gerund, they are never placed be-
 “ fore them, but are always incorporated at the
 “ end ; and as for the Infinitives you must take
 “ away the last letter. Example, *credetemi*, be-
 “ lieve me ; *a dirvi*, to tell you ; *in vedendolo*,
 “ in seeing him or it ; and not *mi credete*, *a vi*
 “ *dire*, or *a direvi*, *in lo vedendo*, &c.

“ III. Whenever a Pronoun Conjunctive is in-
 “ corporated at the end of a Verb, take notice,
 “ that if such Verb be a Monosyllable, or one of
 “ those Persons of Tenses that has an Accent upon
 “ the last letter, we are obliged to double the
 “ Consonant of the Pronoun Conjunctive thus,
 “ *mmi*, *vvi*, *lli*, &c. and then the Accent of the
 “ Verb is lost. Example, *lei mi parlò* or *lei par-*
 “ *lommi*, she spoke to me ; *lui vi darà*, or *lui da-*
 “ *ravvi*, he will give to you ; *lei la comprò*, or *lei*
 “ *comprolla*, she bought it.

“ From this rule only is excepted the Pronoun
 “ Conjunctive *gli*, whose first Consonant is never
 “ doubled, though the Accent of the Verb is lost.
 “ Example, *gli darò*, or *darogli*, I shall give to
 “ him ; *gli vederò*, or *vederogli*, I shall see them.

“ Also *il* (the Pronoun Conjunctive belonging
 “ to the Accusative Case of the Third Person
 “ Masculine Singular) is never incorporated at
 “ the end of Verbs, nor is so frequently made use
 “ of before them as *lo*.

“ IV. All

“ IV. All those marked with a star, may be
 “ Articles as well as Pronouns Conjunctive, which
 “ are distinguished by their Position; thus, if be-
 “ fore Nouns, they are always Articles. Example,
 “ *gli scolari*, the scholars; *lo studio*, the study;
 “ *la dama*, the lady, &c. but before or after
 “ Verbs are always Pronouns Conjunctive. Ex-
 “ ample, *gli dirò*, I shall tell him; *lo vedo*, I see
 “ him or it; *la guardai*, I did look at her or at
 “ it, &c.

“ V. By practice you will find that *ci*, *ne*, and
 “ *vi*, sometimes are not Pronouns Conjunctive in
 “ Italian, and consequently have a different sig-
 “ nification.

“ VI. Some Pronouns Conjunctive may join
 “ one with the other among themselves, and both
 “ seem to be as one word, which you may ob-
 “ serve as follows.

Of Pronouns Conjunctive Copulative.

VERY often some of the Pronouns Conjunctive in Italian join together, and both appear as if but one word; for which reason they are properly called Copulatives, but are in effect two words in one, and each of them has a different signification.

The following Conjunctives, *mi*, *ci*, *ti*, *vi*, *si*, do often join with *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne*; but every one of the former changes *i* into *e*, and both incorporated seem as one word.

EXAMPLE.

*melo, mela, meli, mele, mene.**celo, ceta, celi, cele, cene.**telo, tela, teli, tele, tene.**velo, vela, veli, vele, vene.**felo, feta, feli, fele, fene.*

From what I have said above every one may perceive that in *melo*, and all the rest, there are two distinct significations; viz. that of *mi* (which according to the above rule changes into *me*) to me; and that of *lo*, him or it; both which are thus expressed in English, him to me, or it to me. Example, *voi melo manderete*, you shall send him or it to me; and if the Person or Thing sent be of the Feminine Gender, we should say *voi mela manderete*, you shall send her or it to me, because *lo* is a Pronoun Conjunctive of the Accusative Case of the Third Person Masculine Singular, and *la*, though it is of the same Person, Number and Case, yet of the Feminine Gender.

In like manner you may comprehend the signification of all the Pronouns Copulative, and may make use of them by changing the former; viz. *mi, ci, ti, &c.* (which generally stands in the Dative Case) according to the Persons; and the latter, viz. *lo, la, li, &c.* (which are usually in the Accusative Case) according to the Gender, Number and Case, of the Persons or Things they are related to.

Only observe, that *ne*, when it is joined with each of the former five Pronouns Conjunctive, as *mene, cene, tene, vene, fene*, does never mean us,

or

or to us, in English, but of it, or of them. Example, *voi mene darete*, you will give me some of it, or of them; *la dama cene parlò*, the lady spoke to us of it, &c.

Take particular notice, that *gli* is often copulated with *lo, la, li, le, ne*; but, in order to soften the pronunciation, we always put an *e* between them thus, *glielo, gliela, glieli, gliele, gliene*; but observe at the same time that *gli* is a Dative Case Singular of the Third Person Masculine, and not an Accusative Plural; and being so copulated may be applied both to a Masculine or Feminine: particularly in speaking of a Woman it does not sound well in pronunciation to say, *lolo, lola, leli, lele*, but *lene* only may be used. Example, *glielo portai*, I brought him or it to him, or to her; *gliela mandai*, I did send her or it to him, or to her.

In the above two examples it is not unlikely that some persons may puzzle themselves, but if they consider what I have already said, first, that when *gli* is copulated with *lo, la, &c.* it may be applied to both sexes; and secondly, that *lo, la, &c.* may be applied to a Person as well as to a Thing, the difficulty will be removed.

Remarks upon the Pronouns Conjunctive Copulative.

“ I HAVE but very little to say concerning these remarks, by reason that most part of them agree with my remarks on the Pronouns Conjunctive, with this difference, that those are

“single, but these copulated; nevertheless ob-
 “serve what follows: *oy* *siquis*
 “I. Very often among the best Writers we find
 “a contraction in *melo*, *celo*, *telo*, *velo*, and *selo*,
 “only when they are placed before Verbs that
 “begin with a Consonant, thus, *me'l* or *mel*, in-
 “stead of *melo*; *ce'l* or *cel*, instead of *celo*; *ve'l* or
 “*tel*, instead of *telo*; *ve'l* or *vel*, instead of *velo*;
 “*se'l* or *sel*, instead of *selo*. Example, *voi me'l*
 “or *mel manderete*, you shall send him or it to
 “me, &c. though at the same time I cannot think
 “this is a contraction of *lo*, but rather of *il*, be-
 “cause both *lo* and *il* are Pronouns Conjunctive
 “of the Accusative Case of the Third Person
 “Masculine Singular, but the former is more
 “used than the latter, as I said before in my
 “third remark on the Pronouns Conjunctive.

“II. These Pronouns Copulative, which are
 “generally used before a Verb in Italian, may
 “also be incorporated at the end of it, and then
 “with the Verb all three together seem but as
 “one word, though in fact they are three words
 “in one, and consequently contain three diffe-
 “rent significations. Example, *Io velo presento*,
 “or *io presentovelo*, I present it to you, or make
 “you a present of it; so that one may clearly
 “perceive here, that in the word *presentovelo*,
 “there is the signification of the Verb *presento*, I
 “present, of the Pronoun *ve*, to you, and of *lo*,
 “it, &c.

“III. The only exception from the above rule
 “is, that the Pronouns Copulative are never
 “placed

“placed before the Imperatives, Infinitives, and
 “Gerunds of Verbs, but are always incorporated
 “at the end of them, and the last letter of the In-
 “finitive always struck off. Example, *ricorda-*
 “*temelo*, remember it to me, or remember me of
 “it; *a dirvelo*, to tell it to you; in *lasciandoveli*,
 “in leaving them to you, &c.

“IV. Whenever these Pronouns Copulative
 “come before a Verb which begins with a Vowel,
 “or *b*, the last letter of the last Pronoun copulated
 “is struck off, and an Apostrophe placed in its
 “stead. Example, *vel' assicuro*, I assure it to you,
 “or I assure you of it; *mel' ha promessa*, he has
 “promised it to me.

“V. When the Pronouns Conjunctive Copu-
 “lative are incorporated at the end of a Verb
 “that is a Monosyllable, or at the end of those
 “Persons of Tenses that have an Accent upon
 “the last letter, we are obliged to double the
 “Consonant of the former Pronoun Conjunctive
 “thus, *mmelo*, *mmela*, *ccelo*, *ccela*, &c. and then the
 “Accent of the Verb is lost by it. Example, *Io*
 “*velo do*, or *io dovvelo*, I'll give it to you; *lui*
 “*melo presta*, or *prestammelo*, he did lend it to
 “me, &c.

“VI. *Glielo*, *gliela*, *glieli*, *gliela*, and *gliene*, all
 “follow the rules I have already laid down above
 “in my second, third, and fourth remarks, and
 “they are only excepted from the fifth remark, be-
 “cause the *g* of *glielo*, *gliela*, &c. is never doubled.

“Note also, That some of these Pronouns (ac-
 “cording to some Authors) may indifferently pre-
 “cede each other among themselves, either se-

“parate or copulated, as *mi si, gli et, lo vi, &c.*
 “but to avoid confusion, the above rules only,
 “with practice and a proper master, will teach
 “you the rest.

Of Pronouns Possessive.

PRONOUNS Possessive are those which generally demonstrate the possession of a Thing as well as of a Person.

The English has no Article in the Nominative and Accusative Cases before the Possessive, but in Italian there is one, as my or mine, *il mio* Masculine Singular, *la mia* Feminine Singular, *i miei* Masculine Plural, *le mie* Feminine Plural, and with oblique Cases of the same Articles we go on in their declension, changing them according to the Gender and Number of the Nouns they are joined with; only observe, that in the Articles of the Genitive, Dative, and Ablative Masculine Plural, we say *de', a', da'*, instead of *dei, ai, dai*.

EXAMPLE.

Singular Masculine.

Nominative, *il mio*, my or mine.

Genitive, *del mio*, of my or mine.

Dative, *al mio*, to my or mine.

Accusative, *il mio*, my or mine.

Ablative, *dal mio*, from my or mine.

Plural Masculine.

Nominative, *i miei*, my or mine.

Genitive, *de' miei*, of my or mine.

Dative, *a' miei*, to my or mine.

Accusative, *i miei*, my or mine.

Ablative, *da' miei*, from my or mine.

Singular

Singular Feminine.

Nominative,	<i>la mia</i> , my or mine.
Genitive,	<i>della mia</i> , of my or mine.
Dative,	<i>alla mia</i> , to my or mine.
Accusative,	<i>la mia</i> , my or mine.
Ablative,	<i>dalla mia</i> , from my or mine.

Plural Feminine.

Nominative,	<i>le mie</i> , my or mine.
Genitive,	<i>delle mie</i> , of my or mine.
Dative,	<i>alle mie</i> , to my or mine.
Accusative,	<i>le mie</i> , my or mine.
Ablative,	<i>dalle mie</i> , from my or mine.

Singular Masculine.

Nominative,	<i>il tuo</i> , thy or thine.
Genitive,	<i>del tuo</i> , of thy or thine.
Dative,	<i>al tuo</i> , to thy or thine.
Accusative,	<i>il tuo</i> , thy or thine.
Ablative,	<i>dal tuo</i> , from thy or thine.

Plural Masculine.

Nominative,	<i>i tuoi</i> , thy or thine.
Genitive,	<i>de' tuoi</i> , of thy or thine.
Dative,	<i>a' tuoi</i> , to thy or thine.
Accusative,	<i>i tuoi</i> , thy or thine.
Ablative,	<i>da' tuoi</i> , from thy or thine.

Singular Feminine.

Nominative,	<i>la tua</i> , thy or thine.
Genitive,	<i>della tua</i> , of thy or thine.
Dative,	<i>alla tua</i> , to thy or thine.
Accusative,	<i>la tua</i> , thy or thine.
Ablative,	<i>dalla tua</i> , from thy or thine.

Plural Feminine.

- Nominative, *le tue*, thy or thine.
 Genitive, *delle tue*, of thy or thine.
 Dative, *alle tue*, to thy or thine.
 Accusative, *le tue*, thy or thine.
 Ablative, *dalle tue*, from thy or thine.

Singular Masculine.

- Nominative, *il suo*, his or hers.
 Genitive, *del suo*, of his or hers.
 Dative, *al suo*, to his or hers.
 Accusative, *il suo*, his or hers.
 Ablative, *dal suo*, from his or hers.

Plural Masculine.

- Nominative, *i suoi*, his or hers.
 Genitive, *de' suoi*, of his or hers.
 Dative, *a' suoi*, to his or hers.
 Accusative, *i suoi*, his or hers.
 Ablative, *da' suoi*, from his or hers.

Singular Feminine.

- Nominative, *la sua*, his or hers.
 Genitive, *della sua*, of his or hers.
 Dative, *alla sua*, to his or hers.
 Accusative, *la sua*, his or hers.
 Ablative, *dalla sua*, from his or hers.

Plural Feminine.

- Nominative, *le sue*, his or hers.
 Genitive, *delle sue*, of his or hers.
 Dative, *alle sue*, to his or hers.
 Accusative, *le sue*, his or hers.
 Ablative, *dalle sue*, from his or hers.

Singular

Singular Masculine.

Nominative, *il nostro*, our or ours.Genitive, *del nostro*, of our or ours.Dative, *al nostro*, to our or ours.Accusative, *il nostro*, our or ours.Ablative, *dal nostro*, from our or ours.

Plural Masculine.

Nominative, *i nostri*, our or ours.Genitive, *de' nostri*, of our or ours.Dative, *a' nostri*, to our or ours.Accusative, *i nostri*, our or ours.Ablative, *da' nostri*, from our or ours.

Singular Feminine.

Nominative, *la nostra*, our or ours.Genitive, *della nostra*, of our or ours.Dative, *alla nostra*, to our or ours.Accusative, *la nostra*, our or ours.Ablative, *dalla nostra*, from our or ours.

Plural Feminine.

Nominative, *le nostre*, our or ours.Genitive, *delle nostre*, of our or ours.Dative, *alle nostre*, to our or ours.Accusative, *le nostre*, our or ours.Ablative, *dalle nostre*, from our or ours.

Singular Masculine.

Nominative, *il vostro*, your or yours.Genitive, *del vostro*, of your or yours.Dative, *al vostro*, to your or yours.Accusative, *il vostro*, your or yours.Ablative, *dal vostro*, from your or yours.

Plural

Plural Masculine.

Nominative, *i vostri*, your or yours.
 Genitive, *de' vostri*, of your or yours.
 Dative, *a' vostri*, to your or yours.
 Accusative, *i vostri*, your or yours.
 Ablative, *da' vostri*, from your or yours.

Singular Feminine.

Nominative, *la vostra*, your or yours.
 Genitive, *della vostra*, of your or yours.
 Dative, *alla vostra*, to your or yours.
 Accusative, *la vostra*, your or yours.
 Ablative, *dalla vostra*, from your or yours.

Plural Feminine.

Nominative, *le vostre*, your or yours.
 Genitive, *delle vostre*, of your or yours.
 Dative, *alle vostre*, to your or yours.
 Accusative, *le vostre*, your or yours.
 Ablative, *dalle vostre*, from your or yours.

Singular Masculine

Nominative, *il loro*, their or theirs.
 Genitive, *del loro*, of their or theirs.
 Dative, *al loro*, to their or theirs.
 Accusative, *il loro*, their or theirs.
 Ablative, *dal loro*, from their or theirs.

Plural Masculine.

Nominative, *i loro*, their or theirs.
 Genitive, *de' loro*, of their or theirs.
 Dative, *a' loro*, to their or theirs.
 Accusative, *i loro*, their or theirs.
 Ablative, *da' loro*, from their or theirs.

	Singular Feminine.
Nominative,	<i>la loro</i> , their or theirs.
Genitive,	<i>della loro</i> , of their or theirs.
Dative,	<i>alla loro</i> , to their or theirs.
Accusative,	<i>la loro</i> , their or theirs.
Ablative,	<i>dalla loro</i> , from their or theirs.
	Plural Feminine.
Nominative,	<i>le loro</i> , their or theirs.
Genitive,	<i>delle loro</i> , of their or theirs.
Dative,	<i>alle loro</i> , to their or theirs.
Accusative,	<i>le loro</i> , their or theirs.
Ablative,	<i>dalle loro</i> , from their or theirs.

Remarks on the Pronouns Possessive.

"I. THESE Pronouns Possessive always come before the Nouns in English, but in Italian may be put either before or after them. Example, my book, *il mio libro*, or *il libro mio*; my house, *la mia casa*, or *la casa mia*, &c. they are nevertheless commonly used before the Nouns.

"II. The Pronouns Possessive in Italian follow the analogy of the Latin, because they always agree with the thing possessed both in Gender and Number, as *il mio palazzo*, my palace; *la vostra casa*, your house.

"III. Although I have said before that the Pronouns Possessive are declined by the Articles *il* or *la*, yet you must observe, that if these Pronouns are joined to a Noun of Quality or Kindred of the Singular Number, then they are declined by the Articles *di*, *a*, *da*, and consequently have no Article in the Nominative and Accusative Cases. Example, *sua Maestà*, his

" his Majesty ; *di sua Maestà*, of his Majesty ;
 " *a sua Maestà*, to his Majesty ; *da sua Maestà*,
 " from his Majesty ; *mio padre*, my father ; *di*
 " *mio padre*, of my father ; *a mio padre*, to my
 " father ; *da mio padre*, from my father ; *mia*
 " *madre*, my mother ; *di mia madre*, of my mo-
 " ther, &c. but if such Nouns of Quality or Kin-
 " dred are of the Plural Number, we use the Ar-
 " ticles *i*, *de'*, &c. or *le delle*, &c. according to
 " their Gender. Ex. *i miei fratelli*, my brothers ;
 " *de' miei fratelli*, of my brothers, &c. *le mie sorelle*,
 " my sisters ; *delle mie sorelle*, of my sisters, &c.

" IV. *Loro* before or after a Verb is a Pronoun
 " Personal, with this difference only, that it is a
 " Nominative when it comes before the Verb,
 " and an Accusative when after it. Example,
 " *loro me lo diedero*, they give it to me ; *io viddi*
 " *loro*, I saw them ; but before or after a Noun
 " it is a Pronoun Possessive. Example, *i loro*
 " *libri*, their books ; *le case loro*, their houses.

" V. When a Pronoun Possessive is preceded
 " by the Prepositions *con*, *in*, or by the Adverb
 " *sù*, upon ; we follow the same rule as mentioned
 " in my remarks upon the Articles, page 25, be-
 " cause the Pronouns Possessive in Italian are de-
 " clined with the Article *il* or *la* (as has been
 " already observed) so that if the Possessive be
 " joined with a Masculine Noun of the Singular
 " Number, we say *col*, *nel*, *sul*, not *con il*, *in il*,
 " *su il* ; and if the Masculine Noun be of the
 " Plural Number, it is *co'*, *ne'*, *su'*, with an
 " Apostrophe ; as for the Possessive, when it is
 " joined with a Feminine Noun, we always say

" *colla*,

“ *colla, nella, sulla*, Singular; *colle, nelle, sulle*,
 “ Plural.

EXAMPLE

with my help, *col mio ajuto*. not *con il*.
 with your eyes, *co' vostri occhi*. *Il con i*.
 with my hand, *colla mia mano*. *con la*.
 with their arms, *colle loro braccia*. *con le*.
 in his or her heart, *nel suo cuore*. *in il*.
 in your thoughts, *ne' vostri pensieri*. *in i*.
 in your happiness, *nella vostra felicità*. *in la*.
 in my misfortunes, *nelle mie disgrazie*. *in le*.
 upon my honour, *sul mio onore*. *su il*.
 upon our designs, *su' nostri disegni*. *su i*.
 upon my word, *sulla mia parola*. *su la*.
 upon your promises, *sulle vostre promesse*. *su le*.

“ To the above three Prepositions some mo-
 “ derns add a fourth; viz. *per*, for; and com-
 “ monly before the Articles *il* or *i*, saying *pel* for
 “ *per il*, for the; and *pei* or *pe'*, for *per i*, for the.

“ VI. From all the above examples, and the
 “ like, we may transpose the Pronoun Possessive
 “ at the end of the phrase, and then the same rule
 “ is followed as mentioned in the remarks upon
 “ the Articles, page 23; *coll' ajuto mio, cogli occhi*
 “ *vostri, colla mano mia, colle braccia vostre, nel cuor*
 “ *suo, nei pensieri vostri, nella felicità vostra, nelle*
 “ *disgrazie mie, sull' onor mio, sui disegni nostri,*
 “ *sulla parola mia, sulle promesse vostre, &c.*

“ VII. We may express the English Preposi-
 “ tion in the same way in Italian, when it comes
 “ before a Feminine Possessive of the Singular
 “ Number, and such Possessive may be also tran-

“sposed at the end of the phrase. Example, in
 “my chamber, *nella mia camera, in mia camera,*
 “or *in camera mia*; in my house, *nella mia casa,*
 “*in mia casa, or in casa mia, &c.*

“VIII. If the English Prepositions *with, in, or*
 “*upon,* come before a Pronoun Possessive, fol-
 “lowed by a Noun of Quality or Kindred of the
 “Singular Number, we never say *col, nel, sul,*
 “but *con, in, su,* because (as was said in the
 “third remark) such Nouns are excepted, and
 “are not declined with the Articles *il* or *la,* but
 “with *di, a, da,* and consequently they have no
 “Article in the Nominative and Accusative Case.

EXAMPLE.

I spoke	{ with his Majesty	{ parlai	{ con sua Maestà	{ not colla,
	{ with my Cousin		{ con mio Cugino	{ col.
I per-	{ in your Highness	{ percepisco	{ in vostra Altezza	{ not nella.
ceive	{ in my Brother		{ in mio Fratello	{ nel.
I rely	{ your Excellency	{ dipendo	{ su vostra Eccellenza	{ not sulla.
upon	{ my Father		{ su mio Padre	{ sul.

“IX. When we transpose the Pronoun Pos-
 “sessive at the end of the above examples, then
 “we must use *col, colla, nel, nella, sul, sulla,* as
 “*colla Maestà sua, col Cugino mio, nell' Altezza*
 “*vostra, &c.* because *Maestà, Altezza* and *Eccel-*
 “*lenza,* are declined with the Article *la,* and
 “*Cugino, Fratello* and *Padre,* with the Article *il.*

“X. But if the Noun of Quality or Kindred
 “be of the Plural Number, we follow the general
 “rule, as I said in the fifth remark, *viz. co', ve',*
 “*su',* Masculine Plural, *colle, nelle, sulle,* Fe-
 “mine Plural.

Of the Pronouns Demonstrative.

PRONOUNS Demonstrative are those that shew any Person or Thing; we have but two sorts in Italian, one to shew a Person or Thing that is near us, and the other to shew a Person or Thing at some distance.

These Pronouns change in their terminations in the same manner as Adjectives do, that is to say, from Masculine into Feminine, and from Singular into Plural, according to the Gender and Number of the Substantive they are joined with, and are declined with the Articles *di, a, da*.

MASC. SING. near us.

Nominative, *Questo*,
Genitive, *di questo*,
Dative, *a questo*,
Accusative, *questo*,
Ablative, *da questo*,

FEM. SING. near us.

Questa, this.
di questa, of this.
a questa, to this.
questa, this.
da questa, from this.

MASC. PLU. near us.

Nominative, *Questi*,
Genitive, *di questi*,
Dative, *a questi*,
Accusative, *questi*,
Ablative, *da questi*,

FEM. PLUR. near us.

Queste, these.
di queste, of these.
a queste, to these.
queste, these.
da queste, from these.

Sometimes we use *cotesto, cotesta*, this; *cotesti, coteste*, these; which have the same signification as *questo, questa, questi, queste*, but when and how they are used you will find in the remarks.

MASC.

MASCULINE SING.		FEMININE SINGULAR,	
at some distance.		at some distance.	
Nominative,	<i>Quello,</i>	<i>Quella,</i>	that.
Genitive,	<i>di quello,</i>	<i>di quella,</i>	of that.
Dative,	<i>a quello,</i>	<i>a quella,</i>	to that.
Accusative,	<i>quello,</i>	<i>quella,</i>	that.
Ablative,	<i>da quello,</i>	<i>da quella,</i>	from that.
MASCULINE PLUR.		FEMININE SINGULAR,	
at some distance.		at some distance.	
N.	<i>Quelli, quei or quegli,</i>	<i>Quelle,</i>	those.
G.	<i>di quelli, or &c.</i>	<i>di quelle,</i>	of those.
D.	<i>a quelli, or &c.</i>	<i>a quelle,</i>	to those.
Ac.	<i>quelli, or &c.</i>	<i>quelle,</i>	those.
A.	<i>da quelli, or &c.</i>	<i>da quelle,</i>	from those.

We have two more Demonstrative Pronouns, which are used or applied only to a Person or Persons near to, or distant from us, and commonly in a kind of slight or disrespect, which are the following, and decline with the same Articles, *di, a, da.*

MASCULINE SINGULAR, near us.

Nominative, *Costui,* he or this Man.

Genitive, *di costui,* of him, or &c.

Dative, *a costui,* to him, or &c.

Accusative, *costui,* he, or &c.

Ablative, *da costui* from him, or &c.

FEMININE

FEMININE SINGULAR, near us.

Nominative,	<i>Costei</i> , she or this Woman.
Genitive,	<i>di costei</i> , of her or, &c.
Dative,	<i>a costei</i> , to her or, &c.
Accusative,	<i>costei</i> , she or, &c.
Ablative,	<i>da costei</i> , from her or, &c.

PLURAL NUMBER for both Genders.

Nom.	<i>Costoro</i> , they or these Men or Women.
Gen.	<i>di costoro</i> , of them or, &c.
Dat.	<i>a costoro</i> , to them or, &c.
Acc.	<i>costoro</i> , them or, &c.
Abl.	<i>da costoro</i> , from them, or &c.

Sometimes we use *cotestui* instead of *costui*, *cotestei* instead of *costei*, and *cotestoro* for *costoro*.

MASCULINE SINGULAR, at some distance.

Nominative,	<i>Colui</i> , he or that Man.
Genitive,	<i>di colui</i> , of him or, &c.
Dative,	<i>a colui</i> , to him or, &c.
Accusative,	<i>colui</i> , him or, &c.
Ablative,	<i>da colui</i> , from him or, &c.

FEMININE SINGULAR, at some distance.

Nominative,	<i>Colei</i> , she or that Woman.
Genitive,	<i>di colei</i> , of her or, &c.
Dative,	<i>a colei</i> , to her or, &c.
Accusative,	<i>colei</i> , her or, &c.
Ablative,	<i>da colei</i> , from her or, &c.

PLURAL NUMBER for both Genders.

Nom.	<i>Coloro</i> , they or those Men or Women.
Gen.	<i>di coloro</i> , of them or, &c.
Dat.	<i>a coloro</i> , to them or, &c.
Acc.	<i>coloro</i> , them or, &c.
Abl.	<i>da coloro</i> , from them or, &c.

To the above Pronouns Demonstrative we may add *ciò*, this or that; which is never related to a Person, as you will find in the remarks, and it is declined with the same Articles *di*, *a*, *da*.

SINGULAR.

Nominative, *Ciò*, this or that.

Genitive, *di ciò*, of this or that.

Dative, *a ciò*, to this or that.

Accusative, *ciò*, this or that.

Ablative, *da ciò*, from this or that.

Remarks on the Pronouns Demonstrative.

“ I. *Questi* and *quegli* are often used for the
“ Singular Number, when either of these Pro-
“ nouns come alone in a sentence, signifying this
“ or that man. Example, *questi fu felice quegli*
“ *sfortunato*, this man was happy, that man un-
“ fortunate.

“ II. Only before *mane* or *mattina*, morning;
“ *sera*, evening; and *notte*, night; we ought not
“ to say *questa* but *sta*, which is an abbreviation
“ of it; and in writing it is always joined with
“ each of the above four Substantives, as if they
“ were but one word. Example, *stamane* or *sta-*
“ *mattina*, this morning; *sta sera*, this evening;
“ *sta notte*, this night.

“ III. *Questo* used without a Substantive is neu-
“ ter, and signifies implicitly this or that action.
“ Example, *se fate questo sarete castigati*, if you
“ do that you will be chastised; *non fate questo per*
“ *l'amor di Dio*, don't do that for God's sake.

“ IV. Either

“ IV. Either in speaking or in writing a letter,
 “ you are to make a great deal of difference be-
 “ tween *questo* and *cotesto*, for *questo* is used by the
 “ person who speaks to another. Example, *v'ho*
 “ *confidato questo mio pensiero*, I have trusted you
 “ with this my scheme; and *cotesto* is used as an
 “ answer by the person that is spoken to. Ex-
 “ ample, *cotesto vostro pensiero lo terrò segreto*, your
 “ scheme I shall keep secret; the same rule we
 “ must observe with *questa* and *cotesta*.

“ V. In writing a letter you should never use
 “ *cotesto* or *cotesta*, if you intend it for that king-
 “ dom, city or place you are in; thus if I were
 “ to write a letter to one at Rome, it would be
 “ bad Italian in me, being in England and mind-
 “ ing to say this kingdom, to make use of *cotesto*,
 “ therefore we should write *questo*, because *cotesto*
 “ or *cotesta*, in good Italian, is understood for
 “ that kingdom, city or place, where the person
 “ lives who receives the letter. I mention these,
 “ because they are errors committed even by some
 “ who pretend to speak and write good Italian.

“ VI. *Cid* this or that, serves for *questo* or *quello*,
 “ and very often in English signifies *it*, and is al-
 “ ways related to a Substantive inanimate or to
 “ an action, but never to a person. Example,
 “ *datemi cid che mi prometteste*, give me that which
 “ you promised me, *non posso far cid*, I cannot
 “ do it.

Of Pronouns Relative.

PRONOUNS Relative are those which shew the Relation or Reference a Noun has to what follows it.

Most Pronouns in Italian have sometimes a Relative Signification, but the chiefest Relatives, or what are most properly so called, are *che* and *quale*.

Che may be related to a Thing or Things, as well as to a Person or Persons of both Genders.

When *che* is related to a Thing or Things, it is common to both Genders, Numbers, and to all Cases, signifying *which* in English, and is declined with the Articles *di, a, da*.

SINGULAR and PLURAL.

Masculine and Feminine.

Nominative,	<i>che,</i>	which.
Genitive,	<i>di che,</i>	of which.
Dative,	<i>a che,</i>	to which.
Accusative,	<i>che,</i>	which.
Ablative,	<i>da che,</i>	from which.

Example, *il libro che*, the book which; *la casa che*, the house which; *i libri che*, the books which; *le case che*, the houses which; *il libro di che*, the book of which; *la casa di che*, the house of which, &c.

When *che* is related to a Person or Persons, it signifies *who* in English, and serves to both Genders and Numbers, but is only used in the Nominative and Accusative Cases; as for the other Cases

THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR. 101

Cases we say *cui*; and it is declined with the same Articles *di, a, da*, thus :

SINGULAR and PLURAL,

Masculine and Feminine,

Nominative, *che*, who.

Genitive, *di cui*, of whom.

Dative, *a cui*, to whom.

Accusative, *che* or *cui*, whom.

Ablative, *da cui*, from whom.

Example, *Pietro che*, Peter who; *Maria che*, Mary who; *Giovanni ed Antonio che*, John and Anthony who; *Anna e Maria che*, Ann and Mary who; but, as I said above, in the other Cases we use *cui*. Example, *l'uomo di cui*, the man of whom; *il servo a cui*, the servant to whom; *il signore da cui*, the gentleman from whom, &c.

Quale (when taken relatively) is used the same as *che*, and may also be equally related to a Thing or Things, as well as to a Person or Persons, and signifies likewise *who* or *which* in English, but requires before it the Article *il* or *la* for the Singular, and *i* or *le* for the Plural, according to the Gender and Number of the Noun it is related to, and is declined thus :

E X A M P L E.

SINGULAR MASCULINE.

Nominative, *il quale*, who or which.

Genitive, *del quale*, of whom or which.

Dative, *al quale*, to whom or which.

Accusative, *il quale*, whom or which.

Ablative, *dal quale*, from whom or which.

PLURAL MASCULINE.

Nominative, *i quali*, who or which.
 Genitive, *de' quali*, of whom or which.
 Dative, *a' quali*, to whom or which.
 Accusative, *i quali*, whom or which.
 Ablative, *da' quali*, from whom or which.

SINGULAR FEMININE.

Nominative, *la quale*, who or which.
 Genitive, *della quale*, of whom or which.
 Dative, *alla quale*, to whom or which.
 Accusative, *la quale*, whom or which.
 Ablative, *dalla quale*, from whom or which.

PLURAL FEMININE.

Nominative, *le quali*, who or which.
 Genitive, *delle quali*, of whom or which.
 Dative, *alle quali*, to whom or which.
 Accusative, *le quali*, whom or which.
 Ablative, *dalle quali*, from whom or which.

Example, *Pietro il quale* or *che*, Peter who; *il libro il quale* or *che*, the book which; *Maria la quale* or *che*, Mary who; *la casa la quale* or *che*, the house which; *Pietro del quale* or *di cui* (not *di che*) Peter of whom; *la casa della quale* or *di che*, the house of which, &c.

Remarks on the Pronouns Relative.

“ I. *CHE* is sometimes declined with the Article *il*, but when it is thus declined it is not related to a Person or Thing, but to an Action, or to what has been said before, and in English generally signifies which or what Thing. Example, *gli dissi di non andare per mare, il che fu causa*

“ *causa della sua morte*, I warned him not to go by
 “ sea, which thing was the cause of his death ;
 “ *del che anche mio fratello sene afflisse*, for which
 “ also my brother was sorry. ”

“ Here we may plainly perceive that *il che*, in
 “ the first example, is related to the action of his
 “ going to sea ; and *del che*, in the second, to what
 “ had been said before ; viz. to the action itself as
 “ well as to his death. ”

“ II. *Cui*, without the Articles *di* or *da*, often
 “ stands for *di cui* Genitive Case, or *a cui* Dative
 “ Case, as follows : ”

“ *Cui* is elegantly placed in our language, and
 “ often used by the best Authors between the
 “ Articles *il*, *la*, (or their Plural or oblique
 “ Cases) and a Substantive to which one of the
 “ said Articles belongs, and then stands for *di*
 “ *cui*, of whom ; and its Article, though it is
 “ suppressed, is nevertheless understood ; or
 “ it may be expressed, both ways being equally
 “ elegant. ”

“ Example, *il cui valore*, or *il di cui valore*,
 “ whose valour ; which is the same as to say in
 “ plain Italian *il valore di cui*, the valour of
 “ whom ; *la cui gloria*, or *la di cui gloria*, whose
 “ glory ; or *la gloria di cui*, the glory of whom,
 “ &c. so that we plainly see that the Articles *il* or
 “ *la* before *cui* does not belong to it, nor is *cui*
 “ ever declined with such an Article, but belongs
 “ to the Substantive that follows *cui*, as evidently
 “ appears in the above examples. ”

“III. In like manner this construction is sometimes to be met with in Authors with respect to *costui*, he or this man; and *loro*, them; without their Articles of the Genitive Case, which are either suppressed and understood, or expressed by turning the phrase, as I said above of *cui*. Example, *la costui professione* or *la professione di costui*, his profession or the profession of him; *il loro piacere* or *il piacere di loro*, their pleasure, or the pleasure of them.

“IV. *Cui* alone may elegantly stand for *a cui* in the Dative Case, and happens when it is preceded by a Noun or Pronoun Personal. Example, *l'uomo cui confidai 'l secreto mi tradì*, the man to whom I intrusted the secret betray'd me; *voi cui fortuna ha posto in mano il freno*, you whom fortune has put the reins in your hands, &c.”

Of Pronouns Interrogative.

THE Pronouns Interrogative are three; viz. *chi*? who? *che*? what? *quale*? which or what of them? and are declined with the Articles *di*, *a*, *da*, thus:

SINGULAR and PLURAL.		SING. and PLUR.	
Masculine and Feminine.		Masc. and Fem.	
Nom.	<i>chi</i> ? who?	<i>che</i> ? what?	
Gen.	<i>di chi</i> ? of whom?	<i>di che</i> ? of what?	
Dat.	<i>a chi</i> ? whom?	<i>a che</i> ? to what?	
Acc.	<i>chi</i> ? whom?	<i>che</i> ? what?	
Abl.	<i>da chi</i> ? from whom?	<i>da che</i> ? from what?	

SINGULAR.

SINGULAR.

Masculine and Feminine.

Nominative,	<i>quale?</i> which or what of them?
Genitive,	<i>di quale?</i> of which? or <i>Ec.</i>
Dative,	<i>a quale?</i> to which? or <i>Ec.</i>
Accusative,	<i>quale?</i> which? or <i>Ec.</i>
Ablative,	<i>da quale?</i> from which? or <i>Ec.</i>

PLURAL.

Nom.	<i>quali</i> or <i>quai?</i> which or what of them?
Gen.	<i>di quali?</i> of which? or <i>Ec.</i>
Dat.	<i>a quali?</i> to which? or <i>Ec.</i>
Accus.	<i>quali?</i> which? or <i>Ec.</i>
Ablat.	<i>da quali?</i> from which? or <i>Ec.</i>

Remarks on the Pronouns Interrogative.

“ I. *CHI?* who? is always related to a Person or Persons for both Genders. Example,
 “ *chi sete voi?* who are you? *di chi parlate?* of whom are you talking? *a chi consegnaste la lettera?* to whom did you deliver the letter?
 “ *da chi venite?* from whom do you come? *chi sono quei due Signori?* who are those two Gentlemen?

“ II. *Che?* what? in asking a question may be applied to a Person or Persons, as well as to a Thing or Things, for both Genders. Example,
 “ *che Signor è questo?* what Gentleman is this?
 “ *che Dama è quella?* what Lady is that? *che libro è questo?* what book is this? *che pitture son quelle?* what pictures are those?

“ III. *Quale?* which? or what of them? of these? or of those? may also be applied to a Person

“ Person or Persons, or to a Thing or Things,
 “ for both Genders, though in its Plural we say
 “ *quali?* Example, *qual' è la casa?* which of
 “ these is the house? *qual libro volete?* what book
 “ of them do you want? *quali soldati sono i migliori*
 “ *in battaglia?* which soldiers are the best in a
 “ battle?

“ IV. Note, That *chi* is often used, in an abso-
 “ lute sentence, not as an Interrogative but as an
 “ indeterminate Relative, because it includes the
 “ Relative and the Antecedent within itself, and
 “ signifies *who, he, that, or whatsoever*, in Eng-
 “ lish. Example, *chi ammazza sarà ammazzato*,
 “ who, he, that, or whosoever kills shall be killed;
 “ *da chi si riceve grazia può riceverfi castigo*, from
 “ whom a favour is received, punishment may
 “ also be received.

“ V. *Chi* is not an Interrogative when used
 “ Distributively, and signifies *some* in English.
 “ Example, *chi qua chi là*, some here some there;
 “ *chi l'affirma chi lo nega*, some affirm it, some deny
 “ it; *chi dice una cosa chi un'altra*, some say one
 “ thing some another.”

Of Indefinite Pronouns.

THESE Pronouns are so called, because they
 commonly signify a Person or Thing in a general
 and unlimited sense.

They are generally declined with the Articles
di, a, da; but if the Articles *the*, or *of the*, &c.
 come before some of the Indefinite Pronouns in
 English, they are declined with the general Ar-
 ticles

ticles in Italian, viz. *il*, *lo*, or *la*, according to the general rules.

Most part of the Indefinite Pronouns follow the nature of the Italian Adjectives in their termination, changing from Masculine into Feminine, and from Singular into Plural; but as some Indefinite Pronouns are naturally Plural, and others naturally Singular, they change only in Gender, except *qualche* and *ogni*, which always preserves the same termination before a Noun, either Masculine or Feminine.

Note, Those marked with a star before them are always applied to Persons; but the others to both Persons and Things; viz,

<i>tutto, tutta,</i>	}	all.
<i>tutti, tutte,</i>		
<i>altro, altra,</i>	}	other, or others.
<i>altri, altre,</i>		
<i>l'altro, l'altra,</i>	}	the other, or the others.
<i>gli altri, le altre,</i>		
<i>stesso, stessa,</i>	}	self-same.
<i>stessi, stesse,</i>		
<i>medesimo, medesima,</i>		
<i>medesimi, medesime,</i>		
<i>medemo, medema,</i>		
<i>medemi, medeme,</i>	}	the same.
<i>lo stesso, la stessa,</i>		
<i>gli stessi, le stesse,</i>		
<i>certo, certa,</i>	}	certain.
<i>certi, certe,</i>		
<i>molti, molte,</i>	}	several.
<i>pochi, poche,</i>		
<i>uno, una,</i>		one.

• <i>gli uni,</i>	} the one or some.
• <i>le une,</i>	
• <i>qualche,</i>	} some.
• <i>ogni,</i>	
• <i>ognuno, ognuna,</i>	} every.
• <i>ciascuno, ciascuna,</i>	
• <i>ciascheduno, ciascheduna,</i>	} every one.
• <i>nessuno, nessuna,</i>	
• <i>nissuno, nissuna,</i>	} no body, no one.
• <i>niuno, niuna,</i>	
• <i>veruno, veruna,</i>	} some.
• <i>alcuno, alcuna,</i>	
• <i>alcuni, alcune,</i>	} somebody.
• <i>qualcuno, qualcuna,</i>	
• <i>qualcheduno, qualchebeduna,</i>	} whosoever.
• <i>chiunque,</i>	
• <i>chicchesia,</i>	} whosoever, or whatsoever.
• <i>chicchesisia,</i>	
• <i>qualunque,</i>	} whosoever, or whatsoever.
• <i>qualsvoglia,</i>	
• <i>qualsisia,</i>	} such.
• <i>qualchessisia,</i>	
Sing. <i>tale, tal, or tal',</i>	} such.
Plur. <i>tali, tai, or ta'</i>	

Remarks on some Indefinite Pronouns.

“ I. *ALTRO*, when used adjectively, makes
 “ *altro, altra, altri, altre*; but by itself, without
 “ being accompanied with a Substantive, signifies
 “ one or another thing in English. Example, *al-*
 “ *tro è parlar di morte altro è morire*, it is one thing
 “ to talk of death, another thing to die; *vuoi*
 “ *altro?* do you want any thing else?
 “ From *altro* are formed several expressions.
 “ Example, *tu non sei buono da altro che a man-*
giare

“ *giare e bere*, you are good for nothing else but
 “ to eat and drink; *per altro*, however, &c.

“ II. *Altri* being a Noun Substantive is often
 “ used for the Nominative Case of the Singular
 “ Number in Italian, and signifies *any one* or *ano-*
 “ *ther man* in English; but for its oblique cases
 “ of the said Number makes *altrui*, and is thus
 “ declined :

Nominative, *altri*, any one.

Genitive, *d' altrui* or *altrui*, of any one.

Dative, *ad altrui* or *altrui*, to any one.

Accusative, *altrui*, any one.

Ablative, *d' altrui*, from any one.

“ Example, *altri piange*, *altri ride*, one weeps;
 “ another laughs; *ditelo altrui ma non a me*, tell
 “ it to another but not to me.

“ III. *Medemo*, *medema*, *medemi*, *medeme*, are
 “ chiefly used in poetry; but in prose we make
 “ use of *stesso*, *stessa*, *stessi*, *stesse*, or *medesimo*, *me-*
 “ *desima*, *medesimi*, *medesime*, self-same; as for
 “ *very same* in English, answers *stessissimo*, *stessissima*,
 “ *stessissimi*, *stessissime*, in Italian.

“ IV. *Uno*, *una*, often stand not for numerical
 “ Nouns but for Pronouns, and signify *a person* in
 “ English. Example, *uno piange l'altro ride*, one
 “ weeps, the other laughs; *ammogliossi con una*
 “ *senza dote*, he married a woman without a for-
 “ tune.

“ V. *Uno*, *una*, being numeral Nouns, have no
 “ Plural, but distributively and correlative to *al-*
 “ *tro* both assume the Plural, and make *gli uni*
 “ Masculine,

“ Masculine, *le une* Feminine, the one or some.

“ Example, *immaginati di voler fare siccome fecero*

“ *i Saguntini o gli Abidei, gli uni tementi Annibale*

“ *Cartaginese, e gli altri Filippo Macedonico, I*

“ thought to do as the Saguntines and Abideys

“ did, the one being afraid of Hannibal the Car-

“ thaginian, the other of Philip the Macedonian;

“ *viddi molte Dame nel giardino, le une vicino il fonte,*

“ *le altre sedendo all' ombra, I* saw several Ladies

“ in the garden, some near the fountain, some

“ sitting in the shade. Though take notice, that

“ *gli uni*, and *le une*, are scarce ever used in con-

“ versation, but in an elegant composition.

“ VI. *Qualche*, some, is indifferently used,

“ either before a Person or Thing, Masculine or

“ Feminine. Example, *qualche Dama*, some Lady;

“ *qualche cosa*, some thing; its Plural is always

“ *alcuni* or *alcune*, not *qualchi*; neither is *qualche*

“ ever put before a Noun of the Plural Number,

“ as it is used by those who do not speak Italian

“ properly, saying *qualche libri, qualche donne*, but

“ *alcuni libri*, some books; *alcune donne*, some

“ women.

“ VII. Note, When *some* in English is before

“ an undeterminate quantity of a thing, either

“ eatable or drinkable, as we commonly say at

“ table, *some bread, some butter, some wine*, &c.

“ we do not make use of *qualche*, but the Italian

“ Article of the Genitive Case, according to the

“ Gender of the Substantive following it. Ex-

“ ample, *dalemi del pane*, give me some bread;

“ *del*

“ *del butiro*, some butter; *della carne*, some meat;
 “ *della gallina*, some fowl; as to the Plural Num-
 “ ber we may use either the Italian Article Plural,
 “ or *alcuni, alcune*. Example, *portatemi dei caponi*
 “ or *alcuni capponi*, bring me some capons; *delle*
 “ or *alcune pernici*, some partridges.

“ VIII. But when *some* in English is before a
 “ Verb that shews the action of eating or drink-
 “ ing, we make use of the Preposition *da* instead
 “ of the aforesaid Articles. Example, *datemi*
 “ *da mangiare*, give me something to eat; *da bere*,
 “ some drink; *da far colazione*, some breakfast;
 “ *da desinare*, some dinner; *da cena* or *da cenare*,
 “ some supper.

“ IX. *Qualche*, which properly is compounded
 “ of *quale* and *che*, sometimes stands for *qualunque*,
 “ whosoever or whatsoever. Example, *qualche tu*
 “ *sie od ombra od uomo certo*, whosoever you be,
 “ either a ghost or real man; *qualche la cagion si*
 “ *sia*, whatever be the cause of it.

“ X. *Ogni*, every; is also indifferently used be-
 “ fore a Person or Thing Masculine or Feminine;
 “ and generally it is never abridged in prose,
 “ though followed by a Noun that begins with
 “ a Vowel. Example, *ogni uomo*, every man;
 “ *ogni anno*, every year; *ogni donna*, every wo-
 “ man; *ogni libro*, every book; *ogni cosa*, every
 “ thing.

“ *Ogni* before *uno, una*, one; or *ora*, hour; of
 “ both words we make but one, thus, *ognuno* or
 “ *ognuna*, every one; *ognora*, every hour.

“ XI. *Ogni*

“XI. *Ogni* is never used before a Noun of the
 “Plural Number, as a few of the Ancients used
 “to do, but only before numeral numbers, and
 “signifies *every* or *each* in English. Example,
 “*ogni due*, each two; *ogni sei mesi*, every six
 “months; and also before *Santi*, Saints; mean-
 “ing All-Saints Day. Example, *la festa d’ogni*
 “*Santi*; though in Italy it is more common to say,
 “*la festa di tutti i Santi*.

“XII. *Nessuno* or *nissuno*, which are more common
 “in conversation than *miuno* or *veruno*, no body
 “or no one; either with or without the negation
 “*non*, are always taken negatively. Example,
 “*io vo con nessuno*, I go with no body; *non ho*
 “*veduto nessuno*, I saw no body; but in a question
 “they are used affirmatively. Example, *v’è*
 “*nessuno che mi voglia?* is there any body that
 “wants me? *avete veduto nessuno?* did you see
 “any body? *sapete nessuna novità*, do you know
 “any news?



C H A P. V.

Of Verbs.

TO give a true definition of a Verb, it must be considered what is essential and what is accidental to it.

The Verb, considered in its essential nature, is a part of speech which serves to describe the being and state of Things and of Persons, the actions which they do, and the impressions which they receive. Example, *essere*, to be; *amare*, to love; *essere amato*, to be loved.

If we consider what is accidental to it, it is a part of speech that receives divers inflections or variations, distinguished among themselves by six Accidents; viz.

By KIND,

By PERSONS,

MOODS,

NUMBERS,

TENSES,

CONJUGATIONS.

Of the Kind.

THE Kind of Verbs is that which shews their nature and proper signification.

The first and most general division of Verbs is into Personal and Impersonal.

A Verb Personal is conjugated by three Persons Singular and three Plural.

E X A M P L E.

Io amo, I love.*Noi amiamo*, we love.*Tu ami*, thou lovest.*Voi amate*, ye love.*Egli ama*, he loves.*Eglino amano*, they love.

I

A Verb

A Verb Impersonal is conjugated by the third Person Singular. Example, *piove*, it rains; *grandina*, it hails; *tuona*, it thunders.

We have another sort of Impersonal Verbs that may also be conjugated with the third Person Plural, as you shall hear when I treat of them.

Besides this division, a Verb considered in regard to the Syntax is of four sorts; viz. Active, Passive, Neuter, and Reciprocal.

A Verb Active is that which expresses an Action that passes from the Agent to the Patient; that is, from the Subject that does or produces an Action, to that which suffers or receives it. Example, *io amo mia moglie*, I love my wife.

A Verb Passive expresses the suffering or reception of an action, and it is always conjugated with the auxiliar Verb *essere*, to be; but with this difference, that of the Nominative and Accusative Cases of the Verb active, the former changes into Ablative, and the latter into Nominative in a Passive Verb. Example, *mia moglie è amata da me*, my wife is loved by me.

A Verb Neuter serves to express the existence of a Thing or Action which remains in the subject that produces it. Example, *io sono*, I am; *io sto*, I stay or remain; *io corro*, I run; *io dormo*, I sleep.

A Verb Reciprocal is an Active Verb that reflects the Action upon the Agent that produces it. Example, *rallegrarsi*, to rejoice one's self; *ricordarsi*, to remember; so that the most part of the Active Verbs may be turned into Reciprocal,

cal, or reflected by the help of the Pronouns Conjunctive *mi, ti, si*, for the Singular, and *ci, vi, si*, for the Plural. Example, *io m' amo*, I love myself; *tu ti lodi*, thou praisest thyself; *egli si scalda*, he warms himself, &c.

The Verbs may also be properly divided into Regular and Irregular.

The Regular Verbs are those which through all their Tenses are conjugated under a general rule. The Irregular ones are those that differ from it.

Of the Moods.

A MOOD is an accident of a Verb, expressing the different ways by which an Action is done.

There are properly but four Moods; viz. the Indicative, Imperative, Conjunctive, and Infinitive.

The Indicative expresses the Action simply, directly, and absolutely. Example, *io canto*, I sing; *egli andò*, he went; *ella verrà*, she will come.

The Imperative Mood commands or forbids. Example, *va*, go thou; *datemi*, give me; *non fate questo*, do not do that.

The Conjunctive is so called, first, because it is generally used with Conjunctions before it; such as *che*, that; *benchè*, although; *affinchè*, that; or, to the end that; *purchè*, provided that; *voglia Dio che*, would to God that. Secondly, because it never makes complete sense unless it be joined

with the Indicative; as *fa desidero io l'amor*, if you desire that I should love him; *credo che piacerebbe a caro*, I believe he would be glad of it.

The Infinitive has an indeterminate signification, and expresses the Action without any Circumstance either of Number or Persons; it has in Italian but two Tenses, viz. the Present and Preterperfect. Example, *amare*, to love; *avere amato*, to have loved; and is construed with the other Moods, by which only it is determined. Example, *io voglio parlare*, I will speak; *vorrei sapere*, I would fain know.

Some Grammarians increase the number of Moods; and, besides the four already mentioned, reckon the Potential, Conditional, and Optative; which is altogether void of reason, since these three are all reducible to the Conjunctive.

Of the Tenses.

THE Tense or Time is that accident of Verbs which shews when the Action is done; so that there are properly but three Tenses; viz. the Present, or time that now is; the Preterperfect, or time past; and the Future, or time to come: But the Preterperfect in Italian is divided into five branches, generally called,

<i>In the Indicative Mood,</i>	<i>And in the Conjunctive,</i>
Preterimperfect.	First Preterimperfect.
Preterperfect Definite.	Second Preterimperfect.
Preterperfect.	Preterperfect.
First Preterpluperfect.	First Preterpluperfect.
Second Preterpluperfect.	Second Preterpluperfect.

The

The Imperative Mood has but one Tense, which relates both to the Present and Future.

The Infinitive has but two Tenses, viz. the Present and the Preterperfect.

Of the Tenses of the Indicative Mood.

THE Indicative Mood, as we hinted before, has seven Tenses, four whereof are simple, and three compound; the four simple Tenses are,

1. The Present, which signifies the time wherein the Action is doing. Example, *io parlo*, I speak; *tu mangi*, thou eatest, &c.

2. The Preterimperfect, is so called, because it expresses an Action begun and not ended. Example, *io scrivevo quando entrò*, I was writing when he came in.

3. The third simple Tense is called Preterperfect Definite, because it is used to express a precise and determinate time. Example, *jeri parlai al Re*, yesterday I spoke to the King; but you must observe, that it is never used to signify an Action done the day we speak in.

4. The Future expresses an Action which is to be done. Example, *io andrò*, I shall or will go; *egli manderà*, he shall or will send.

The three compound Tenses are those that are compounded with the three first simple Tenses of the auxiliary Verbs, *avere*, to have; or *essere*, to be; and the Participle of the Verb which is to be conjugated.

EXAMPLE.

<i>Io ho parlato,</i>	I have spoken.	<i>Io sono venuto,</i>	I am come.
<i>Io avevo parlato,</i>	} I had spoken.	<i>Io ero venuto,</i>	} I was come.
<i>Io ebbi parlato,</i>		<i>Io fui venuto,</i>	

The first compound Tense, called Preterperfect or Perfect Indefinite, is used to express an Action perfectly past, without determining any precise time or reiteration of an Action. Example, *io l'ho veduto prima di voi*, I have seen it before you; *io l'ho parlato più di cento volte*, I have spoken to him above a hundred times; or else it serves to express an Action done the same day one speaks in. Example, *l'ho veduto stamattino*, I saw him this morning.

The second compound Tense, called First Preterpluperfect, expresses an Action not only perfectly past, but done also before another spoken of is begun. Example, *avevo finito di scrivere quando egli entrò*, I had done writing when he came in; *l'opera era finita quando il Re parti*, the opera was done when the King went away; *avevo risoluto d'andare in Italia, ma i miei affari non m'elo permisero*, I had resolved to go to Italy, but my business did not permit me.

The third compound Tense, commonly called Second Preterpluperfect, but more properly the Definite Compound, expresses also an Action perfectly past and preceeding another; and, besides, it has a perfect and determinate signification, as *intesa ch'ebbi questa novella ne feci partecipe suo padre*, so soon as I had learned that news I acquainted his father of it.

Of the Tenses of the Imperative Mood.

THIS Mood, as we said before, has but one Tense, which relates to both Present and Future. Example, *amatelo*, love him; *ditemi*, tell me.

Of the Tenses of the Conjunctive Mood.

THE three Simple Tenses are;

The Present, which sometimes has also a Future signification. Example, *benchè io ami*, though I love; *purchè vogliate*, provided you will; *supposto che venga*, suppose he comes.

The second Simple Tense is the first Preterimperfect, properly called the Future Conditional, as *se tu m'amassi*, if you were to or could love me; *se io fossi*, if I were to or could be.

The third Simple Tense is the second Imperfect, as *io amerei*, I should love; *io sarei*, I should be.

The four Compound Tenses are those that are formed of the three Simple Tenses of the Conjunctive Mood, and of the Future of the Indicative, of the auxiliary Verbs *avere* to have, and *essere* to be, and the Participle past of the Verb which is to be conjugated. Example, the Preterperfect, as *che io abbia amato*, that I have loved; *che io sia stato*, that I have been.

First Preterpluperfect, or Preterite Conditional, as *se io avessi amato*, if I had loved; *se fossi stato amato*, if I had been loved.

Second Preterpluperfect, as *io avrei amato*, I should have loved; *io sarei stato amato*, I should have been loved.

Future, as *averrò amato*, I shall have loved; *sarò stato amato*, I shall have been loved.

Of the Tenses of the Infinitive Mood.

THE Infinitive Mood has but two Tenses, one Simple, *viz.* the Present. Example, *amare*, to love; the other Compound, *viz.* the Preter, as *avere amato*, to have loved.

Of the Persons.

THERE are three Persons in Verbs, as in Pronouns. Example, *io amo*, *tu ami*, *egli* or *ella ama*, I love, thou lovest, he or she loves; *noi amiamo*, *voi amate*, *eglino* or *elleno amano*, we love, ye love, they love.

Of the Numbers.

EVERY Tense in the three first Moods has two Numbers, *viz.* the Singular, as *io amo*, I love; and the Plural, as *noi amiamo*, we love.

Of Conjugations.

CONJUGATION is the due distribution of the several parts of Verbs; *viz.* Moods, Tenses, Persons, and Numbers.

There are three different Conjugations in Italian, which are distinguished by the termination of their Infinitive Mood.

The First,	} makes the	{	<i>are</i> , as <i>amare</i> , to love.
Second,			<i>ere</i> , as <i>credere</i> , to believe.
Third,			<i>ire</i> , as <i>dormire</i> , to sleep.

Note. The second and third Conjugations of the Latin Infinitives ending in *ere*, either short or long, are both reduced into one in Italian, as you shall hear.

General Rules for the Termination of Verbs.

THE Conjugations will be most easily learned by forming previously an idea of the Tenses: Therefore I shall give here some rules which will contribute very much to the learning of them.

Of the Tenses of the Indicative Mood.

ALL the First Persons Singular of the Present of the Indicative Mood do terminate in *a*. Example, *io amo*, I love; *io credo*, I believe; *io dormo*, I sleep.

The Second Persons Singular of the same Tense are terminated in *i*. Example, *tu ami*, thou lovest; *tu credi*, thou believest; *tu dormi*, thou sleepest.

The Third Persons of the first Conjugation are terminated in *a*. Example, *egli ama*, he loves. Those of the Second and Third in *e*. Example, *egli crede*, he believes; *egli dorme*, he sleeps.

The First Persons of the Plural terminate in *iamo*. Example, *noi amiamo*, we love; *noi crediamo*, we believe; *noi dormiamo*, we sleep.

The Second Persons in *ate, ete, ite*. Example, *voi amate*, ye love; *voi credete*, ye believe; *voi dormite*, ye sleep.

The Third Persons terminate in *ano* for the first Conjugation, and in *ono* for the Second and Third. Example, *eglino amano*, they love; *eglino credono*, they believe; *eglino dormono*, they sleep.

The

The First Persons of the Imperfect Tense are terminated in *avo, eva, ivo*, for the Singular, as *io amavo*, I did love; *io credevo*, I did believe; *io dormivo*, I did sleep.

The Second Persons terminate in *avi, evi, ivi*. Example, *tu amavi, tu credevi, tu dormivi*.

The Third Persons in *ava, eva, iva*. Example, *egli amava, egli credeva, egli dormiva*.

The First Persons Plural in *vàmo*. Example, *noi amavàmo, noi credevàmo, noi dormivàmo*.

The Second in *vàte*. Example, *voi amavàte, voi credevàte, voi dormivàte*.

The Third in *vano*. Example, *eglino amàvano, eglino credevano, eglino dormivano*.

The First Persons Singular of the Preter Definite are terminated in *ai* for the first Conjugation, as *io amai*, I loved; in *ei* for the Second, *io credei*, I believed; and in *ii* for the Third, *io dormii*, I slept.

The Second Persons in *asti, esti, isti*. Example, *tu amasti, tu credesti, tu dormisti*.

The Third Persons in *ò, è, ì*. Example, *egli amò, egli credè, egli dormì*.

The First Persons Plural in *ammo, emmo, immo*. Example, *noi amammo, noi credemmo, noi dormimmo*.

The Second Persons in *aste, este, iste*. Example, *voi amaste, voi credeste, voi dormiste*.

The Third Persons in *arano, erano, irono*. Example, *eglino amarano, eglino crederano, eglino dormirono*.

The First Persons Singular of the Future terminate in *erò* for the first and second Conjugation, and

and in *irò* for the Third. Example, *io amerò*, I shall love; *io crederò*, I shall believe; *io dormirò*, I shall sleep.

The Second in *rai*. Example, *tu amerai*, *tu crederai*, *tu dormirai*.

The Third in *rà*. Example, *egli amerà*, *egli crederà*, *egli dormirà*.

The First Plural in *remo*. Example, *noi ameremo*, *noi crederemo*, *noi dormiremo*.

The Third in *ranno*. Example, *eglino ameranno*, *eglino crederanno*, *eglino dormiranno*.

Of the Imperative Mood.

THE Second Persons Singular of the Imperative Mood terminate in *a* for the first Conjugation, and in *i* for the Second and Third. Example, *ama tu*, love thou; *credi tu*, believe thou; *dormi tu*, sleep thou.

The third of the first Conjugation terminate in *i*, and of the Second and Third in *a*, as *ami egli*, let him love; *creda egli*, let him believe; *dorma egli*, let him sleep.

The First of the Plural in *iamo*, as *amiamo*, *crediamo*, *dormiamo*.

The Second in *ate*, *ete*, *ite*, as *amate*, *credete*, *dormite*.

The Third in *ino* for the first Conjugation, and in *ano* for the Second and Third, as *amino*, *credano*, *dormano*.

Of the Conjunctive Mood.

THE Three Persons Singular of the Conjunctive Mood terminate in *i*, the Second and Third in *a*, as *ch'io, tu, egli ami*, that I, thou, he may love; *ch'io, tu, egli creda*, that I, thou, he may believe; *ch'io, tu, egli dorma*, that I, thou, he may sleep.

The First Persons Plural in *iamo*, as *noi amiamo, noi crediamo, noi dormiamo*.

The Second Persons in *iate*, as *voi amiate, voi crediate, voi dormiate*.

The Third Persons in *ino* for the first Conjugation, and in *ano* for the Second and Third, as *egliino amino, egliino credano, egliino dormano*.

The First Persons of the first Imperfect, for the first Conjugation, do terminate in *assi*; for the Second in *essi*; and for the Third in *issi*; as *se io amassi, se io credassi, se io dormissi*.

The Second Persons do terminate in the same, as *tu amassi, tu credessi, tu dormissi*.

The Third Persons in *asse, esse, isse*. Example, *egli amasse, egli credesse, egli dormisse*.

The First Persons Plural in *assimo, essimo, issimo*, as *noi amassimo, noi credessimo, noi dormissimo*.

The Second Persons in *aste, este, iste*, as *voi amaste, voi credeste, voi dormiste*.

The Third Persons in *assero, essero, issero*, as *egliino amassero, egliino credessero, egliino dormissero*.

The First Persons of the second Preterimperfect are terminated in *rei*, as *io amerei, io crederei, io dormirei*.

The

The Second Persons in *resti*, as *tu ameresti*, *tu crederesti*, *tu dormiresti*.

The Third Persons in *rebbe*, as *egli amerebbe*, *egli crederebbe*, *egli dormirebbe*.

The First Persons Plural terminate in *remmo*, as *noi ameremmo*, *noi crederemmo*, *noi dormiremmo*.

The Second Persons in *reste*, as *voi amereste*, *voi credereste*, *voi dormireste*.

The Third Persons in *rebbero*, as *eglino amerebbero*, *eglino crederebbero*, *eglino dormirebbero*.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

THE Infinitive Mood, for the first Conjugation, terminates in *are*, as *amare*, to love; the Second in *ere* short or long; as *credere*, to believe; *temere*, to fear; and for the Third in *ire*, as *dormire*, to sleep.

The Gerund for the first Conjugation terminates in *ando*, as *amando*, loving; the Second and Third in *endo*, as *credendo*, believing, *dormendo*, sleeping.

The Participle of the Regular Verbs terminates in *ato*, for the first Conjugation, as *amato*, loved; in *uto* for the Second, as *creduto*, believed; and in *ito* for the Third, as *dormito*, slept.

Note, There are some Verbs of the second Conjugation, whose Infinitives not only terminate in *ere*, according to its general termination, but also they may terminate in *erre*, *urre*, *urre*, which is nothing else but a contraction of their original termination in *aere*, *uere*, *uere*, by which last termination we plainly see that belongs to the second

second Conjugation. Example, *estrarre* or *estrarre*, to abstract; *componere* or *compotere*, to compose; *producere* or *produrre*, to produce, &c.

But to return to the Italian Conjugation, you must observe, that no Verb can be conjugated through all its Moods and Tenses, without these two Verbs *avere*, to have; and *essere*, to be; which, for that reason, are properly called Auxiliary Verbs, and must be learned before one goes on to the Conjugation of others.

At the same time remember what I observed in my remarks upon the Pronouns Personal, which following the Latin analogy, are oftentimes left out in a sentence, for the different termination there is in a Verb, through all the Persons in every Tense.

As also, that *egli*, he; *ella*, she; and *eglino* or *elleno*, they; are commonly used in writing; but in conversation we make use of *lui*, he; *lei*, she; and *loro*, they; so that, though I have made use of the former, through the Conjugations of all the Verbs in this Grammar, yet I think it more proper that the Verbs should be conjugated with the latter.

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb.

avere, to have.

Indicative Mood Present Tense.

Sing. *Io ho*, I have.

Tu hai, thou hast.

Egli ha, he hath.

Plur. *Noi abbiamo*, we have.

Voi avete, ye have.

Eglino hanno, they have.

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

- Sing. *Io avevo* or *aveva*, I had.
Tu avevi, thou hadst.
Egli aveva, he had.
 Plur. *Noi avevamo*, we had.
Voi avevate, ye had.
Eglino avevano, they had.

Preterperfect Definite.

- Sing. *Io ebbi*, I had.
Tu avesti, thou hadst.
Egli ebbe, he had.
 Plur. *Noi avemmo*, we had.
Voi aveste, ye had.
Eglino ebbero, they had.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Io ho avuto*, I have had.
Tu hai avuto, thou hast had.
Egli ha avuto, he hath had.
 Plur. *Noi abbiamo avuto*, we have had.
Voi avete avuto, ye have had.
Eglino hanno avuto, they have had.

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io avevo avuto*, I had had.
Tu avevi avuto, thou hadst had.
Egli aveva avuto, he had had.
 Plur. *Noi avevamo avuto*, we had had,
Voi avevate avuto, ye had had.
Eglino avevano avuto, they had had.

Second

Second Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io ebbi avuto*, I had had.
Tu aveſti avuto, thou hadſt had.
Egli ebbe avuto, he had had.
 Plur. *Noi avevamo avuto*, we had had.
Voi aveſte avuto, ye had had.
Eglino ebbero avuto, they had had.

Future.

- Sing. *Io averò* or *avrò*, I ſhall or will have.
Tu averai or *avrà*, thou ſhalt or wilt have.
Egli averà or *avrà*, he ſhall or will have.
 Plur. *Noi averemo* or *avremo*, we ſhall or will have.
Voi averete or *avrete*, ye ſhall or will have.
Eglino averanno or *avranno*, they ſhall or will have.

Imperative.

- Sing. *Abbi tu*, have thou.
Abbia egli, let him have.
 Plur. *Abbiamo noi*, let us have.
Abbiàte voi, have ye.
Abbiano eglino, let them have.

Conjunctive.

- Sing. *Che io abbia*, that I have or may have.
Che tu abbia or *abbia*, that thou haſt or mayſt have.
Che egli abbia, that he haſt or may have.
 Plur. *Che noi abbiamo*, that we have or may have.
Che voi abbiàte, that ye have or may have.
Che eglino abbiano, that they have or may have.

First

First Preterimperfect.

Sing. *Se io avessi*, if I had or should, could or would have.

Se tu avessi, if thou hadst, &c.

Se egli avesse, if he had, &c.

Plur. *Se noi avessimo*, if we had, &c.

Se voi aveste, if ye had, &c.

Se eglino avessero, if they had, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing. *Io averei* or *avrei*, I should, could or would have.

Tu averesti or *avresti*, thou shouldst have, &c.

Egli averebbe, *avrebbe* or *averia*, he should have, &c.

Plur. *Noi averemmo* or *avremmo*, we should have, &c.

Voi avereste or *avreste*, ye should have, &c.

Eglino averebbero, *avrebbero* or *averiano*, they should have, &c.

Preterperfect.

Sing. *Che io abbia avuto*, that I have or may have had.

Che tu abbia avuto, that thou hast had, &c.

Che egli abbia avuto, that he hath had, &c.

Plur. *Che noi abbiamo avuto*, that we have had, &c.

Che voi abbiate avuto, that ye have had, &c.

Che eglino abbiano avuto, that they have had, &c.

First Preterpluperfect.

Sing. *Se io avessi avuto*, if I had had or could, should or would have had.

Se tu avessi avuto, if thou hadst had, &c.

Se egli avesse avuto, if he had had, &c.

Plur. *Se noi avessimo avuto*, if we had had, &c.

Se voi aveste avuto, if ye had had, &c.

Se eglino avessero avuto, if they had had, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing. *Io averei avuto*, I should, could or would have had.

Tu averesti avuto, thou shouldst have had, &c.

Egli averebbe avuto, he should have had, &c.

Plur. *Noi averemmo avuto*, we should have had, &c.

Voi avereste avuto, ye should have had, &c.

Eglino averebbero avuto, they should have had, &c.

Future.

Sing. *Io averò avuto*, I shall have had.

Tu averai avuto, thou shalt have had.

Egli averà avuto, he shall have had.

Plur. *Noi averemo avuto*, we shall have had.

Voi averete avuto, ye shall have had.

Eglino averanno avuto, they shall have had.

Infinitive.

Present. *Avere*, to have.

Preterperf. *Avere avuto*, to have had.

Gerund,

Gerund.

Present. *Avendo*, having.

or *Coll' avere*, in having, or by having.

Con avere, in having, &c.

In avere, in having, &c.

Nell' avere, in having, &c.

Preterperfect. *Avendo avuto*, having had.

Participle.

Sing. Masc. *Avuto*, had.

Fem. *Avuta*, had.

Plur. Masc. *Avuti*, had.

Fem. *Avute*, had.

Note, The First and Third Persons Singular of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense, some write them thus, *ho* instead of *ho*, I have; and *ha* instead of *ha*, he has.

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb essere, to be.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

Sing. *Io sono*, I am.

Tu sei, thou art.

Egli è, he is,

Plur. *Noi siamo*, we are.

Voi sete or *siete*, ye are.

Eglino sono, they are.

Preterimperfect.

Sing. *Io ero* or *era*, I was.

Tu eri, thou wast.

Egli era, he was.

Plur. *Noi eramo* or *eravamo*, we were.

Voi erate or *eravate*, ye were.

Eglino erano, they were.

Preterperfect Definite.

- Sing. *Io fui*, I was.
Tu fosti, thou wast.
Egli fu, he was.
- Plur. *Noi fummo*, we were.
Voi foste, ye were.
Eglino furono, they were.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Io sono stato*, I have been.
Tu sei stato, thou hast been.
Egli è stato, he hath been.
- Plur. *Noi siamo stati*, we have been.
Voi siete stati, ye have been.
Eglino sono stati, they have been.

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io ero stato*, I had been.
Tu eri stato, thou hadst been.
Egli era stato, he had been.
- Plur. *Noi erámo stati*, we had been.
Voi eráte stati, ye had been.
Eglino érano stati, they had been.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io fui stato*, I had been.
Tu fosti stato, thou hadst been.
Egli fu stato, he had been.
- Plur. *Noi fummo stati*, we had been.
Voi foste stati, ye had been.
Eglino furono stati, they had been.

Future.

Future.

- Sing. *Io sarò*, I shall be.
Tu sarai, thou shalt be.
Egli sarà, he shall be.
 Plur. *Noi saremo*, we shall be.
Voi sarete, ye shall be.
Eglino saranno, they shall be.

Imperative.

- Sing. *Sii tu*, be thou.
Sia egli, be he.
 Plur. *Siamo noi*, be we.
Siate voi, be ye.
Siano or sieno eglino, be they.

Conjunctive Present Tense.

- Sing. *Che io sia*, that I be or may be.
Che tu sia or sii, that thou be, &c.
Che egli sia, that he be, &c.
 Plur. *Che noi siamo*, that we be, &c.
Che voi siate, that ye be, &c.
Che eglino siano or sieno, that they be, &c.

First Preterimperfect.

- Sing. *Se io fossi*, if I were or should, could or would be.
Se tu fossi, if thou wert, &c.
Se egli fosse, if he were, &c.
 Plur. *Se noi fossimo*, if we were, &c.
Se voi foste, if ye were, &c.
Se eglino fossero, if they were, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

- Sing. *Io sarei*, I should, could or would be.
Tu saresti, thou shouldst be, &c.
Egli sarebbe, he should be, &c.
 Plur. *Noi saremmo*, we should be, &c.
Voi sareste, ye should be, &c.
Eglino sarebbero, they should be, &c.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Che io sia stato*, that I have been.
Che tu sia or *sii stato*, that thou hast been.
Che egli sia stato, that he hath been.
 Plur. *Che noi siamo stati*, that we have been.
Che voi siate stati, that ye have been.
Che eglino siano stati, that they have been.

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Se io fossi stato*, if I had been, or should, could or would have been.
Se tu fossi stato, if thou hadst been, &c.
Se egli fosse stato, if he had been, &c.
 Plur. *Se noi fossimo stati*, if we had been, &c.
Se voi foste stati, if ye had been, &c.
Se eglino fossero stati, if they had been, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io sarei stato*, I should, could or would have been.
Tu saresti stato, thou shouldst have been, &c.
Egli sarebbe stato, he should have been, &c.
 Plur. *Noi saremmo stati*, we should have been, &c.
Voi sareste stati, ye should have been, &c.
Eglino sarebbero stati, they should have been, &c.

Future.

*Future.*Sing. *Io sarò stato*, I shall have been.*Tu sarai stato*, thou shalt have been.*Egli sarà stato*, he shall have been.Plur. *Noi saremo stati*, we shall have been.*Voi sarete stati*, ye shall have been.*Eglino saranno stati*, they shall have been.*Infinitive.*Present. *Essere*, to be.Preterperfect. *Essere stato*, to have been.*Gerund.*Present. *Essendo*, being.or *Coll' essere*, in being or by being.*Con essere*, in being, &c.*In essere*, in being, &c.*Nell' essere*, in being, &c.Preterperfect. *Essendo stato*, having been.*Participle.*Sing. Mas. *Stato*, been.Fem. *Stata*, been.Plur. Mas. *Stati*, been.Fem. *State*, been.

Remarks on the Infinitives, Gerunds, and Participles, of both the Auxiliary as well as of all the other Verbs in general.

“ I. EVERY Infinitive in the Italian language
 “ takes place of a Substantive Masculine Singular,
 “ by putting the Article *il* or *lo* before it, which is
 “ expressed in English by the Article *the* placed
 “ before the Gerund. Example, *l'essere*, the be-
 “ ing; *il mangiare*, the eating; *lo studiare*, the
 “ studying, &c.

“ II. You have observed that the English Ge-
 “ runds *having* and *being*, are *avendo* and *essendo*
 “ in Italian. But when before a Gerund the
 “ English make use of the Prepositions *in* or *by*;
 “ as, *in* or *by having*, *in* or *by being*, are ren-
 “ dered into Italian, not by putting the Preposi-
 “ tions before the Gerund, but before the Inf-
 “ nitive. Example, *in having* or *by having*,
 “ *coll'avere*, *con avere*, *in avere* or *nell'avere*; *in*
 “ *being*, *coll'essere*, *con essere*, &c. not *coll'avendo*,
 “ *con avendo*, *coll'essendo*, *con essendo*, &c. except
 “ that the Italian Preposition *in* may go before
 “ the Italian Gerund. Example, *in avere* or *in*
 “ *avendo*, &c. which rule is to be observed with
 “ respect to all the Gerunds of all Italian Verbs.

“ III. When the Italian Gerunds begin with a
 “ Consonant, from those two Italian Prepositions,
 “ wherein the Article *lo* is incorporated at the end
 “ of them, *viz. coll', nell'*, we take away the last *l*
 “ and the Apostrophe, and say *col, nel*. Example,
 “ *col* or *nel mangiare*, *in* or *by eating*; *col* or *nel*
 “ *dormire*,

“ *dormire*, in or by sleeping, &c. But if the Gerund begins with an *s* followed by a Consonant, we say *collo*, *nello*. Example, *collo* or *nello studiare*, in or by studying; *collo* or *nello scrivere*, in or by writing, &c. -

“ IV. By the foregoing Conjugations you may perceive the Verbs *avere* and *essere* are composed by themselves, in which the English are sometimes mistaken, because their Participles *had* and *been* are both governed by the Verb *to have*, saying, *I have had*, and *I have been*; but in Italian the Participle *avuto*, *had*, is governed by the Verb *avere*; as *ho avuto*, *I have had*; and the Participle *stato*, *been*, by *essere*; as *sono stato*, *I have been*; and so throughout all the Compound Tenses.

“ V. The Participles, not only of the Auxiliary, but also of all the Italian Verbs, partake of the same nature of the Italian Adjective, changing from Masculine into Feminine, and from Singular into Plural. Example, *avuto*, *avuta*, *avuti*, *avute*, *had*; *stato*, *stata*, *stati*, *state*, *been*.

“ VI. There is a great deal of difference between both these Participles, the former remaining with its termination in *o*, or it may agree with the Accusative Case, *viz.* the Thing *had*, both in Gender and Number; but the latter always agrees with the Nominative Case also according to its Gender and Number.

EXAMPLE.

ho dormito, *I have slept*.

ho camminato, *I have walked*.

ho avuto un libro, I have had a book.

ho avuto or *avuta una lettera*, I have had a letter.

ho avuto or *avuti due libri*, I have had two books.

ho avuto or *avute due lettere*, I have had two letters.

“ Except when the Accusative precedes the
 “ Auxiliary Verb, the Participle must agree with
 “ it according to its Gender and Number; as *la*
 “ *lettera che ho avuta*, the letter which I have had;
 “ not *avuto*. *I libri che ho ricevuti*, the books
 “ which I have received; not *ricevuto*. *Le cose*
 “ *che m'avete mandate*, the things which you sent
 “ me; not *mandato*, &c.

“ The following examples shew how a Parti-
 “ ciple, joined with the second Auxiliary Verb,
 “ agrees in Gender and Number with the Nomi-
 “ native. As, when a person says,

if a Gentleman, *sono stato*, } I have been.

if a Lady, *sono stata*, }

if Gentlemen, *siamo stati*, } we have been.

if Ladies, *siamo state*, }

“ VII. The same rule is to be observed with
 “ respect to all the Italian Participles when they
 “ are joined with the first Auxiliary Verb *avere*,
 “ to have; all of them retain the termina-
 “ tion in *o*; and if the Participle of the Verb
 “ governs an Accusative Case, it may agree with
 “ it according to its Gender and Number; but
 “ when it is joined with the second Auxiliary
 “ Verb *essere*, to be; it must agree in Gender
 “ and Number with the Nominative, as was before
 “ observed.”

Although

Although I have spoken at large of the termination of the Tenses in the Section of Conjugation, yet I thought that it would be more easy and sooner learnt to put all those terminations together in one table, by which it will appear, that from the Infinitive Mood of the three Conjugations, one may form all the Tenses of all the Moods by taking off the three last letters: Let other Italian Grammarians say what they will, their manner of forming the terminations of Tenses is perplexed and intricate; and I might venture to affirm, that a Beginner would sooner, and with greater facility, learn the Verbs by getting them by heart, than by studying their rules.

The following table is to shew the three Regular Conjugations, wherein, at the beginning of the lines, you will observe the Infinitive, and over against them the termination of each Person of the Tenses, which is to be joined to the Infinitive, striking off the three last letters from it. Example, *amare*, strike off *are* there remains *am*, then add *o* to it, it makes *amo*, the First Person Singular of the Indicative Mood; and so through all the rest.

Note, This table serves only for Regular Verbs; as to the Irregular, I shall give a table apart; and as to the pronunciation, which is short and which is long, there you will find the Accents upon those Persons of Tenses wherein you may be dubious, and which may serve as a general rule.

The three Conjugations of Regular Verbs.

Indicative Mood Present.

Persons Singular.

1 2 3

am
cred
dormare
ere
ire

1 2 3

a
e
e

1 2 3

iamo
iamo
iamo

Persons Plural.

2 3

ate
ete
iteano
ono
ono

Preterimperfect.

ivi
evi
iviavo
cvo
ivoare
ere
ireavâmo
evâmo
ivâmoavâte
evâte
ivâteâvano
êvano
îvano

Perfect Definite.

asti
esti
istiai
ei
iiare
ere
ireammo
emmo
immoaste
este
istearono
erono
irono

Future.

erai
erai
iraierò
erò
iròare
ere
ireeremo
eremo
iremoerete
erete
ireteeranno
eranno
iranno

<i>Imperative Mood.</i>					
a	i	ino	a	i	ino
i	a	ano	i	a	ano
i	a	ano	i	a	ano
<i>Conjunctive Mood Present.</i>					
i	i	ino	i	i	ino
a	a	ano	a	a	ano
a	a	ano	a	a	ano
<i>First Preterimperfect.</i>					
assi	asse	ássero	assi	asse	ássero
essi	esse	éssero	essi	esse	éssero
issi	isse	íssero	issi	isse	íssero
<i>Second Preterimperfect.</i>					
eressi	erebbe	erébbero	eressi	erebbe	erébbero
eressi	erebbe	erébbero	eressi	erebbe	erébbero
iresti	irebbe	irebbero	iresti	irebbe	irebbero
<i>Gerund.</i>					
am	are	ato	am	are	ato
cred	ere	uto	cred	ere	uto
dorm	ire	ito	dorm	ire	ito
<i>Participle.</i>					
am	are	ato	am	are	ato
cred	ere	uto	cred	ere	uto
dorm	ire	ito	dorm	ire	ito

*The Three Conjugations of Regular Verbs.**The First Conjugation in ate; as amare, to love.**Indicative Present.*Sing. *Io amo*, I love.*Tu ami*, thou lovest.*Egli ama*, he loveth.Plur. *Noi amiamo*, we love.*Voi amate*, ye love,*Eglino amano*, they love.*Preterimperfect.*Sing. *Io amavo*, I loved or did love.*Tu amavi*, thou lovedst.*Egli amava*, he loved.Plur. *Noi amavamo*, we loved.*Voi amavate*, ye loved.*Eglino amavano*, they loved.*Preterperfect Definite.*Sing. *Io amai*, I loved or did love.*Tu amasti*, thou lovedst.*Egli amò*, he loveth.Plur. *Noi amammo*, we loved.*Voi amaste*, ye loved.*Eglino amarono*, they loved.*Preterperfect.*Sing. *Io ho amato*, I have loved.*Tu hai amato*, thou hast loved.*Egli ha amato*, he hath loved.Plur. *Noi abbiamo amato*, we have loved.*Voi avete amato*, ye have loved.*Eglino hanno amato*, they have loved.*First*

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io avevo amato*, I had loved.
Tu avevi amato, thou hadst loved.
Egli aveva amato, he had loved.
 Plur. *Noi avevamo amato*, we had loved.
Voi avevate amato, ye had loved.
Eglino avevano amato, they had loved.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io ebbi amato*, I had loved.
Tu avesti amato, thou hadst loved.
Egli ebbe amato, he had loved.
 Plur. *Noi avemmo amato*, we had loved.
Voi aveste amato, ye had loved.
Eglino ebbero amato, they had loved.

Future.

- Sing. *Io amerò*, I shall or will love.
Tu amerai, thou shalt or wilt love.
Egli amerà, he shall or will love.
 Plur. *Noi ameremo*, we shall or will love.
Voi amerete, ye shall or will love.
Eglino ameranno, they shall or will love.

Imperative.

- Sing. *Ama tu*, love thou.
Ami lui, let him love.
 Plur. *Amiamo noi*, let us love.
Amate voi, love ye.
Amino loro, let them love.

Conjunctive

Conjunctive Present.

- Sing. *Che io ami*, that I love or may love.
Che tu ami, that thou lovest or may love.
Che egli ami, that he loveth or may love.
- Plur. *Che noi amiamo*, that we love or may love.
Che voi amiáte, that ye love or may love.
Che eglino amino, that they love or may love.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io amassi*, if I loved, or should would or could love.
Se tu amassi, if thou lovedst or should, &c.
Se egli amasse, if he loved or should, &c.
- Plur. *Se noi amassimo*, if we loved or should, &c.
Se voi amaste, if ye loved or should, &c.
Se eglino amassero, if they loved or should, &c.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io amerei*, I should, would or could love.
Tu amaresti, thou shouldst love, &c.
Egli amerebbe, he should love, &c.
- Plur. *Noi ameremmo*, we should love, &c.
Voi amereste, ye should love, &c.
Eglino amerébbero, they should love, &c.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Che io abbia amato*, that I have loved.
Che tu abbia amato, that thou hast loved.
Che egli abbia amato, that he hath loved.
- Plur. *Che noi abbiamo amato*, that we have loved.
Che voi abbiate amato, that ye have loved.
Che eglino abbiano amato, that they have loved.

First

First Preterpluperfect.

Sing. *Se io avessi amato*, if I had loved, or should would or could have loved.

Se tu avessi amato, if thou hadst loved or, &c.

Se egli avesse amato, if he had loved or, &c.

Plur. *Se noi avessimo amato*, if we had loved or, &c.

Se voi aveste amato, if ye had loved or, &c.

Se eglino avessero amato, if they had loved or, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing. *Io avrei amato*, I had loved, or should would or could have loved.

Tu avresti amato, thou hadst loved or, &c.

Egli avrebbe amato, he had loved or, &c.

Plur. *Noi averemmo amato*, we had loved or, &c.

Voi avreste amato, ye had loved or, &c.

Eglino avrebbero amato, they had loved or &c.

Future.

Sing. *Io averò amato*, I shall have loved.

Tu averai amato, thou shalt have loved.

Egli averà amato, he shall have loved.

Plur. *Noi avremo amato*, we shall have loved.

Voi avrete amato, ye shall have loved.

Eglino avranno amato, they shall have loved.

Infinitive.

Present. *Amare*, to love.

Preterperfect. *Avere amato*, to have loved.

Gerund.

Present. *Amando*, loving.
 or *Coll' amare*,
Con amare,
In amare,
Nell' amare, } in or by loving.

Preterperfect. *Avendo amato*, having loved.

Participle.

Sing. Masc. *Amato*,
 Fem. *Amata*, } loved.
Plur. Masc. *Amati*,
 Fem. *Amate*.

The Second Conjugation in ere;
as credere, to believe.

Indicative Mood Present Tense.

Sing. *Io credo*, I believe.

Tu credi, thou believest.

Egli crede, he believeth.

Plur. *Noi crediamo*, we believe.

Voi credete, ye believe.

Eglino credono, they believe.

Preterimperfect.

Sing. *Io credevo*, I believe or did believe.

Tu credevi, thou believedst, &c.

Egli credeva, he believed, &c.

Plur. *Noi credevamo*, we believed, &c.

Voi credevate, ye believed, &c.

Eglino credevano, they believed, &c.

Preter-

Preterperfect Definite.

- Sing. *Io credei* or *credetti*, I believed or did believe.
Tu credesti, thou believedst or, &c.
Egli credè or *credette*, he believed or, &c.
 Plur. *Noi credemmo*, we believed or, &c.
Voi credeste, ye believed or, &c.
Eglino credèrono or *credettero*, they believed or, &c.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Io ho creduto*, I have believed.
Tu hai creduto, thou hast believed.
Egli ha creduto, he hath believed.
 Plur. *Noi abbiamo creduto*, we have believed.
Voi avete creduto, ye have believed.
Eglino hanno creduto, they have believed.

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io avevo creduto*, I had believed.
Tu avevi creduto, thou hadst believed.
Egli aveva creduto, he had believed.
 Plur. *Noi avevamo creduto*, we had believed.
Voi avevate creduto, ye had believed.
Eglino avevano creduto, they had believed.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io ebbi creduto*, I had believed.
Tu avesti creduto, thou hadst believed.
Egli ebbe creduto, he had believed.
 Plur. *Noi avemmo creduto*, we had believed.
Voi aveste creduto, ye had believed.
Eglino ebbero creduto, they had believed.

Future.

- Sing. *Io crederò*, I shall or will believe.
Tu crederai, thou shalt or wilt believe.
Egli crederà, he shall or will believe.
 Plur. *Noi crederemo*, we shall or will believe.
Voi crederete, ye shall or will believe.
Eglino crederanno, they shall or will believe.

Imperative.

- Sing. *Credi tu*, believe thou.
Creda egli, let him believe.
 Plur. *Crediamo noi*, let us believe.
Credete voi, believe ye.
Crédano eglino, let them believe.

Conjunctive.

- Sing. *Che io creda*, that I believe or may believe.
Che tu creda, that thou believest, &c.
Che egli creda, that he believeth, &c.
 Plur. *Che noi crediamo*, that we believe or, &c.
Che voi crediate, that ye believe or, &c.
Che eglino crédano, that they believe or, &c.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io credessi*, if I believed, should would or could believe.
Se tu credessi, if thou believedst, &c.
Se egli credesse, if he believed, &c.
 Plur. *Se noi credéssimo*, we believed, &c.
Se voi credeste, ye believed, &c.
Se eglino credéssero, they believed, &c.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io crederei*, I should, would or could believe.
Tu crederesti, though shouldst believe, &c.
Egli crederebbe or *credereia*, he should believe,
 &c.
- Plur. *Noi crederemmo*, we should believe, &c.
Voi credereste, ye should believe, &c.
Eglino crederebbero or *credariano*, they should believe, &c.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Che io abbia creduto*, that I have believed.
Che tu abbia creduto, that thou hast believed.
Che egli abbia creduto, that he hath believed.
- Plur. *Che noi abbiamo creduto*, that we have believed.
Che voi abbiate creduto, that ye have believed.
Che eglino abbiano creduto, that they have believed.

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Se io avessi creduto*, if I had believed or I should have believed.
Se tu avessi creduto, if thou hadst believed, &c.
Se egli avesse creduto, if he had believed, &c.
- Plur. *Se noi avessimo creduto*, if we had believed, &c.
Se voi aveste creduto, if ye had believed, &c.
Se eglino avessero creduto, if they had believed, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing. *Io averei creduto*, I had believed or should, would or could believe.

Tu averesti creduto, thou hadst believed, &c.

Egli averebbe creduto, he had believed, &c.

Plur. *Noi averemmo creduto*, we had believed, &c.

Voi avereste creduto, ye had believed, &c.

Eglino averebbero creduto, they had believed, &c.

Future.

Sing. *Io averò creduto*, I shall have believed.

Tu averai creduto, thou shalt have believed.

Egli averà creduto, he shall have believed.

Plur. *Noi avremo creduto*, we shall have believed.

Voi avrete creduto, ye shall have believed.

Eglino avranno creduto, they shall have believed.

Infinitive.

Present. *Crédere*, to believe.

Preterperfect. *Avere creduto*, to have believed.

Gerund.

Present. *Credendo*, believing.

or *Col credere*,

Con credere,

In credere,

Nel credere,

} in or by believing.

Preterperfect. *Avendo creduto*, having believed.

Participle.

Sing. *Mas. Creduto*,

Fem. Creduta,

Plur. *Mas. Creduti*,

Fem. Credute,

} believed.

The third Conjugation in ire, as dormire to sleep.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io dormo*, I sleep.

Tu dormi, thou sleepest.

Egli dorme, he sleepeth.

Plur. *Noi dormiamo*, we sleep.

Voi dormite, ye sleep.

Eglino dormono, they sleep.

Preterimperfect.

Sing. *Io dormivo*, I slept or did sleep.

Tu dormivi, thou sleepest, &c.

Egli dormiva, he slept, &c.

Plur. *Noi dormivamo*, we slept, &c.

Voi dormivate, ye slept, &c.

Eglino dormivano, they slept, &c.

Preterperfect Definite.

Sing. *Io dormii*, I slept or did sleep.

Tu dormisti, thou sleepest, &c.

Egli dormì, he slept, &c.

Plur. *Noi dormimmo*, we slept, &c.

Voi dormiste, ye slept, &c.

Eglino dormirono, they slept, &c.

Preterperfect.

Sing. *Io ho dormito*, I have slept.

Tu hai dormito, thou hast slept.

Egli ha dormito, he hath slept.

Plur. *Noi abbiamo dormito*, we have slept.

Voi avete dormito, ye have slept.

Eglino hanno dormito, they have slept.

*First Preterpluperfect.*Sing. *Io avevo dormito*, I had slept.*Tu avevi dormito*, thou hadst slept.*Egli aveva dormito*, he had slept.Plur. *Noi avevamo dormito*, we had slept.*Voi avevate dormito*, ye had slept.*Eglino avevano dormito*, they had slept.*Second Preterpluperfect.*Sing. *Io ebbi dormito*, I had slept.*Tu avesti dormito*, thou hadst slept.*Egli ebbe dormito*, he had slept.Plur. *Noi avemmo dormito*, we had slept.*Voi aveste dormito*, ye had slept.*Eglino ebbero dormito*, they had slept.*Future.*Sing. *Io dormirò*, I shall or will sleep.*Tu dormirai*, thou shalt, &c.*Egli dormirà*, he shall, &c.Plur. *Noi dormiremo*, we shall, &c.*Voi dormirete*, ye shall, &c.*Eglino dormiranno*, they shall, &c.*Imperative.*Sing. *Dormi tu*, sleep thou.*Dorma egli*, let him sleep.Plur. *Dormiamo noi*, let us sleep.*Dormite voi*, sleep ye.*Dormano eglino*, let them sleep.

Conjunctive Present.

- Sing. *Che io dorma*, that I sleep or may sleep.
Che tu dorma, that thou sleepest, &c.
Che egli dorma, that he sleepest, &c.
Plur. *Che noi dormiamo*, that we sleep, &c.
Che voi dormiate, that ye sleep, &c.
Che eglino dormano, that they sleep, &c.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io dormissi*, if I sleep or if I should, would or could sleep.
Se tu dormissi, if thou sleepest, &c.
Se egli dormisse, if he slept, &c.
Plur. *Se noi dormissimo*, if we slept, &c.
Se voi dormiste, if ye slept, &c.
Se eglino dormissero, if they sleep, &c.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io dormirei*, I should, would or could sleep.
Tu dormiresti, thou shouldst sleep, &c.
Egli dormirebbe, he should sleep, &c.
Plur. *Noi dormiremmo*, we should sleep, &c.
Voi dormireste, ye should sleep, &c.
Eglino dormirebbero, they should sleep, &c.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Che io abbia dormito*, that I have slept.
Che tu abbia dormito, that thou hast slept.
Che egli abbia dormito, that he hath slept.
Plur. *Che noi abbiamo dormito*, that we have slept.
Che voi abbiate dormito, that ye have slept.
Che eglino abbiano dormito, that they have slept.

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Se io avessi dormito*, if I had slept or I should,
 would or could have slept.
Se tu avessi dormito, if thou hadst slept, &c.
Se egli avesse dormito, if he had slept, &c.
- Plur. *Se noi avéssimo dormito*, if we had slept, &c.
Se voi aveste dormito, if ye had slept, &c.
Se eglino avéssero dormito, if they had slept, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io averei dormito*, I had slept or should,
 would or could have slept.
Tu averesti dormito, thou hadst slept, &c.
Egli averebbe dormito, he had slept, &c.
- Plur. *Noi averemmo dormito*, we had slept, &c.
Voi avereste dormito, ye had slept, &c.
Eglino averebbero dormito, they had slept, &c.

Future.

- Sing. *Io avrò dormito*, I shall have slept.
Tu avrai dormito, thou shalt have slept.
Egli avrà dormito, he shall have slept.
- Plur. *Noi avremo dormito*, we shall have slept.
Voi avrete dormito, ye shall have slept.
Eglino avranno dormito, they shall have slept.

Infinitive.

- Present. *Dormire*, to sleep.
 Preterperfect. *Avere dormito*, to have slept.

Gerund.

- Present. *Dormendo*, sleeping.
- or Col dormire,*
Con dormire,
In dormire,
Nel dormire,
- } in or by sleeping.

Preter-

Preterperfect. *Avendo dormito*, having slept.

Participle. *Dormito*, slept.

Observations on Verbs of the first Conjugation ending in *care* and *gare*.

All Verbs which end in *care* and *gare* take an *b* after *c* or *g* in those Tenses where *c* and *g* come before *e* or *i*, that is to say, in the Present of the Indicative Mood, in the Future, in the Imperative, in the Conjunctive Mood, and in the Second Imperfect of the Conjunctive Mood, of which I shall here give two Examples.

Peccare, to sin.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io pecco*, I sin.

Tu pecchi, thou sinnest.

Egli pecca, he sinneth.

Plur. *Noi pecciamo*, we sin.

Voi peccate, ye sin.

Eglino peccano, they sin.

Future.

Sing. *Io peccherò*, I shall sin.

Tu peccherai, thou shalt sin.

Egli peccherà, he shall sin.

Plur. *Noi peccheremo*, we shall sin.

Voi peccherete, ye shall sin.

Eglino peccheranno, they shall sin.

Imperative.

Sing. *Pecca tu*, sin thou.

Pecchi egli, let him sin.

Plur. *Pecchiamo noi*, let us sin.

Peccate voi, sin ye.

Pecchino eglino, let them sin.

Con-

*Conjunctive Present.*Sing. *Che io pecchi*, that I sin.*Che tu pecchi*, that thou sinnest.*Che egli pecchi*, that he sinneth.Plur. *Che noi pecchiâmo*, that we sin.*Che voi pecchiâte*, that ye sin.*Che eglino pecchino*, that they sin.*Second Imperfect.*Sing. *Io peccerei*, I should sin.*Tu pecceresti*, thou shouldst sin.*Egli peccerebbe*, he should sin.Plur. *Noi pecceremmo*, we should sin.*Voi peccereste*, ye should sin.*Eglino peccerebbero*, they should sin.*Pagare, to pay.**Indicative Present.*Sing. *Io pago*, I pay.*Tu paghi*, thou payest.*Egli paga*, he payeth.Plur. *Noi paghiamo*, we pay.*Voi pagate*, ye pay.*Eglino pagano*, they pay.*Future.*Sing. *Io pagherò*, I shall pay.*Tu pagherai*, thou shalt pay.*Egli pagherà*, he shall pay.Plur. *Noi pagheremo*, we shall pay.*Voi pagherete*, ye shall pay.*Eglino pagheranno*, they shall pay.

Impe-

Imperative.

- Sing. *Paga tu*, pay thou.
Paghi egli, let him pay.
 Plur. *Pagbiamo noi*, let us pay.
Pagate voi, pay ye.
Pagbino eglino, let them pay.

Conjunctive Present.

- Sing. *Che io paghi*, that I pay.
Che tu paghi, that thou payest.
Che egli paghi, that he payeth.
 Plur. *Che noi paghiamo*, that we pay.
Che voi paghiate, that ye pay.
Che eglino pagbino, that they pay.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io pagherei*, I should pay.
Tu pagheresti, thou shouldst pay.
Egli pagherebbe, he should pay.
 Plur. *Noi pagheremmo*, we should pay.
Voi paghereste, ye should pay.
Eglino pagherebbero, they should pay.

Before I proceed to the Conjugation of Irregular Verbs, I think it is proper that every one should know first how to conjugate the Passives as well as the Reciprocals.

Of the Conjugation of Passive Verbs.

THE Conjugation of Passive Verbs is very easy, and consists (both in Italian and English) only in the joining the Participle of those Verbs which may become Passives, and to be conjugated with

with the Auxiliary Verb *essere*, to be, through all its Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons; but you must observe, that in Italian this Participle varies according to the difference of Gender and Number of the Nominative Case.

E X A M P L E.

Essere amato, to be loved.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io sono amato*, I am loved.

Tu sei amato, thou art loved.

Egli è amato, he is loved.

Plur. *Noi siamo amati*, we are loved.

Voi siete amati, ye are loved.

Eglino sono amati, they are loved.

Imperfect. *Io ero amato*, &c. I was loved.

Perfect Definite. *Io fui amato*, &c. I was loved.

Preterperfect. *Io sono stato amato*, &c. I have been loved.

First Preterpluperfect. *Io ero stato amato*, &c. I had been loved.

Second Preterpluperfect. *Io fui stato amato*, &c. I had been loved.

Future. *Io sarò amato*, &c. I shall be loved.

After the same manner are conjugated the Imperative, Conjunctive, and Infinitive Moods of all Verbs of whatever Conjugation that may become Passive.

The Conjugation of Reciprocal or Reflected Verbs.

A RECIPROCAL Verb is nothing else but an Active Verb, whose Action returns upon the Agent that produces it.

This Reflexion of the Action is marked in all Persons of Tenses with these Pronouns Conjunctions, viz. *mi, ti, si*, in the Singular, and *ci, vi, si*, in the Plural, but so, that its Compound Tenses are always formed with the Auxiliary Verb *essere*, to be.

The Infinitive of these Reciprocal Verbs is formed from the Infinitive of the three regular Conjugations, by taking off the last letter, and adding *si* to it, as *amare*, to love; *amar^{si}*, to love one's self; *credere*, to believe; *credersⁱ*, to believe one's self, &c.

Note, That not all the Active Verbs can become Reciprocal, but only those whose Action or Passion may meet in the same subject; because in some Verbs, as *bévere*, to drink; *generare*, to beget; and many more, would be mere nonsense in any language to say, *béversⁱ*, to drink one self; or *generarsⁱ*, to beget one self; and on the contrary, some Verbs are always Reciprocal in Italian, as *pentirsⁱ*, to repent; *lamentarsⁱ*, to complain, &c.

The following example will be sufficient to instruct you how to conjugate the Reciprocal Verbs.

Levarsi, to rise.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io mi levo*, I rise.

Tu ti levi, thou risest.

Egli si leva, he riseth.

Plur. *Noi ci leviamo*, we rise.

Voi vi levate, ye rise.

Eglino si levano, they rise.

Imper-

*Imperfect.*Sing. *Io mi levavo*, I did rise.*Tu ti levavi*, thou didst rise.*Egli si levava*, he did rise.Plur. *Noi ci levavamo*, we did rise.*Voi vi levavate*, ye did rise.*Eglino si levavano*, they did rise.*Preterperfect Definite.*Sing. *Io mi levai*, I arose or did rise.*Tu ti levasti*, thou rosest or did rise.*Egli si levò*, he rose or, &c.Plur. *Noi ci levammo*, we rose or, &c.*Voi vi levaste*, ye rose or, &c.*Eglino si levarono*, they rose or, &c.*Preterperfect.*Sing. *Io mi sono levato*, I am risen.*Tu ti sei levato*, thou art risen.*Egli s'è levato*, he is risen.Plur. *Noi ci siamo levati*, we are risen.*Voi vi siete levati*, ye are risen.*Eglino si sono levati*, they are risen.*First Preterpluperfect.*Sing. *Io m'ero levato*, I was risen.*Tu t'eri levato*, thou wast risen.*Egli s'era levato*, he was risen.Plur. *Noi c'eramo levati*, we were risen.*Voi v'erate levati*, ye were risen.*Eglino s'erano levati*, they were risen.*Second Preterpluperfect.*Sing. *Io mi fui levato*, I was risen.*Tu ti fosti levato*, thou wert risen.*Egli si fu levato*, he was risen.

Plur.

- Plur. *Noi ci fummo levati*, we were risen.
Voi vi foste levati, ye were risen.
Eglino si furono levati, they were risen.

Future.

- Sing. *Io mi leverò*, I shall or will rise.
Tu ti leverai, thou shalt or, &c.
Egli si leverà, he shall or, &c.
Plur. *Noi ci leveremo*, we shall or, &c.
Voi vi leverete, ye shall or, &c.
Eglino si leveranno, they shall or, &c.

Imperative.

- Sing. *Levati*, rise thou.
Levassi, let him rise.
Plur. *Leviamoci*, let us rise.
Levatevi, rise ye.
Levinsi, let them rise.

Conjunctive Present.

- Sing. *Cb' io mi levi*, that I rise.
Che tu ti levi, that thou risest.
Cb' egli si levi, that he riseth.
Plur. *Che noi ci leviâmo*, that we rise.
Che voi vi leviâte, that ye rise.
Cb' eglino si levino, that they rise.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io mi levassi*, if I should rise.
Se tu ti levassi, if thou shouldst rise.
Se egli si levasse, if he should rise.
Plur. *Se noi ci levassimo*, if we should rise.
Se voi vi levaste, if ye should rise.
Se eglino si levassero, if they should rise.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io mi leverei*, I should rise.
Tu ti leveresti, thou shouldst rise.
Egli si leverebbe, he should rise.
- Plur. *Noi ci leveremmo*, we should rise.
Voi vi levereste, ye should rise.
Eglino si leverebbero, they should rise.

Preterperfect.

- Sing. *Che io mi sia levato*, that I be risen.
Che tu ti sia levato, that thou be risen.
Che egli si sia levato, that he be risen.
- Plur. *Che noi ci siamo levati*, that we be risen.
Che voi vi siate levati, that ye be risen.
Che eglino si siano levati, that they be risen.

First Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Se io mi fossi levato*, if I were risen.
Se tu ti fossi levato, if thou wert risen.
Se egli si fosse levato, if he were risen.
- Plur. *Se noi ci fossimo levati*, if we were risen.
Se voi vi foste levati, if ye were risen.
Se eglino si fossero levati, if they were risen.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- Sing. *Io mi sarei levato*, I were risen.
Tu ti saresti levato, thou wert risen.
Egli si sarebbe levato, he were risen.
- Plur. *Noi ci saremmo levati*, we were risen.
Voi vi sareste levati, ye were risen.
Eglino si sarebbero levati, they were risen.

Future.

Future.

Sing. *Io mi sarò levato*, I shall be risen.

Tu ti sarai levato, thou shalt be risen.

Egli si sarà levato, he shall be risen.

Plur. *Noi ci saremo levati*, we shall be risen.

Voi vi sarete levati, ye shall be risen.

Eglino si saranno levati, they shall be risen.

Infinit. Present. *Levarsi*, to rise.

Preterperfect. *Essersi levato*, to be risen.

Gerund. *Levandosi*, rising.

Participle. *Levatosi*, risen.

“Note, That if the Reciprocal Verbs begin
“with a Vowel, we always take off the *i* of the
“said Pronouns Conjunctive and put an Apostrophe
“in its stead, as, *io m'amo*, I love myself;
“*io m'inganno*, I deceive myself, &c. and not *io*
“*mi amo*, *io mi inganno*, &c.”

*A Collection of the Regular Verbs in all the
Three Conjugations.*

IN order to save some trouble to Beginners, I have here thought proper to insert the following collection, which may not only be got by heart by often reading, but it will also furnish the mind with the most necessary Verbs commonly used in conversation.

As all Verbs belonging to the first Conjugation are Regular (except four) it is almost impossible to put them all here, except what is in common use; as to those of the second and third Conjugations, which are but few Regular in our language, you will find all of them in this collection.

Hereafter I shall in a gradual manner take notice of the Irregular Verbs.

At the same time it may not be improper for every one to use himself to conjugate them either as Active, Passive, or Reciprocal, according as the Action of Verbs may be capable of in a subject, because, as I before observed, it is inconsistent for some Verbs to be conjugated, either Passive or Reciprocal.

The Conjugation of Verbs in are, like amare, to love.

<i>Abbandonare</i> , { to forsake,	<i>Adattare</i> , to adapt.
{ or abandon.	<i>Additare</i> , to point with
<i>Abbassare</i> , { to go down,	one's finger.
{ or stoop.	<i>Adulare</i> , to flatter.
<i>Abbracciare</i> , to embrace.	<i>Affirmare</i> , to affirm.
<i>Abbruciare</i> , to burn.	<i>Affittare</i> , to let.
<i>Accampare</i> , to encamp.	<i>Affrontare</i> , to affront.
<i>Accarezzare</i> , to caress.	<i>Ajutare</i> , to help.
<i>Accettare</i> , to accept.	<i>Allentare</i> , to loose.
<i>Acciicare</i> , to blind.	<i>Alloggiare</i> , to lodge.
<i>Accommodare</i> , { to accom-	<i>Allontanare</i> , to remove.
{ modate, or	<i>Ammazzare</i> , to kill.
{ mend.	<i>Amministrare</i> , to admi-
<i>Accompagnare</i> , to accom-	nister.
pany.	<i>Ammirare</i> , to admire.
<i>Acconciare</i> , to mend.	<i>Ammogliarsi</i> , to marry, viz.
<i>Accoppiare</i> , to couple.	to take to wife.
<i>Accordare</i> , { to agree, or	<i>Amplificare</i> , to amplify.
{ put in tune.	<i>Appianare</i> , to level.
<i>Accostarsi</i> , to go near one.	<i>Applicare</i> , to apply.
<i>Accumulare</i> , to accumulate	<i>Appoggiare</i> , to support or
<i>Accusare</i> , to accuse.	lead.
<i>Acquistare</i> , to acquire.	<i>Approvare</i> , to approve.
	<i>Arricciare</i> ,

<i>Arricciare</i> , to curl.	<i>Chiamare</i> , to call.
<i>Arrischiare</i> , } to venture.	<i>Ciarlare</i> , to prattle.
<i>Arrisicare</i> , }	<i>Comandare</i> , to command.
<i>Arrivare</i> , } to arrive.	<i>Cominciare</i> , }
<i>Capitare</i> , }	<i>Incominciare</i> , } to begin.
<i>Asciugare</i> , to dry.	<i>Comprare</i> , to buy.
<i>Ascoltare</i> , to hearken.	<i>Condannare</i> , to condemn.
<i>Affaltare</i> , to assault.	<i>Confessare</i> , to confess.
<i>Affediare</i> , to besiege.	<i>Confermare</i> , to confirm.
<i>Aspettare</i> , } to expect, or	<i>Confrontare</i> , to confront.
} wait for.	<i>Congiungere</i> , to conjugate.
<i>Afficurare</i> , to assure.	<i>Consegnare</i> , to deliver.
<i>Avanzare</i> , to advance.	<i>Conservare</i> , to keep, or
<i>Avvicinare</i> , } to go, or	} preserve.
} put near.	<i>Considerare</i> , to consider.
<i>Avvisare</i> , to give notice.	<i>Consultare</i> , to advise.
<i>Augurare</i> , to wish.	<i>Contrastare</i> , to quarrel, or
<i>Aumentare</i> , to increase.	} contend.
<i>Baciare</i> , to kiss.	<i>Coronare</i> , to crown.
<i>Ballare</i> , to dance.	<i>Corteggiare</i> , to court.
<i>Battezzare</i> , to baptize.	<i>Curare</i> , to cure.
<i>Beffare</i> , to deride.	<i>Declinare</i> , to decline.
<i>Biasimare</i> , to blame.	<i>Dedicare</i> , to dedicate.
<i>Burlare</i> , to jest, or laugh	<i>Desiderare</i> , to desire, or
at.	} wish.
<i>Cagionare</i> , to cause.	<i>Desinare</i> , to dine.
<i>Caminare</i> , to walk.	<i>Dichiarare</i> , to declare.
<i>Cambiare</i> , to change.	<i>Diffidare</i> , to mistrust.
<i>Cantare</i> , to sing.	<i>Digiunare</i> , to fast.
<i>Cascare</i> , to fall.	<i>Dimenticarsi</i> , to forget.
<i>Castigare</i> , to punish.	<i>Dispensare</i> , to bestow.
<i>Cavalcare</i> , to ride.	<i>Dissegnare</i> , to design.
<i>Cenare</i> , to sup.	<i>Dissimulare</i> , to dissemble.
<i>Cercare</i> , to seek, or look	<i>Disipare</i> , to waste.
for.	<i>Disinganare</i> , to undeceive.
<i>Certificare</i> , to certify.	<i>Disturbare</i> , to disturb.
	<i>Diventare</i> ,

<i>Diventare</i> , to become.	<i>Grattare</i> , to scratch.
<i>Dimandare</i> , } to ask.	<i>Gridare</i> , to cry out.
<i>Domandare</i> , } to ask.	<i>Guadagnare</i> , to win or get.
<i>Domare</i> , to tame.	<i>Guardare</i> , to look at, or
<i>Dominare</i> , to domineer.	guard.
<i>Dubitare</i> , to doubt.	<i>Guastare</i> , to spoil.
<i>Eccettuare</i> , to except.	<i>Diffipare</i> , to waste.
<i>Entrare</i> , to come in.	<i>Guidare</i> , to guide.
<i>Ereditare</i> , to hereditate.	<i>Gustare</i> , }
<i>Errare</i> , to mistake.	<i>Tastare</i> , } to taste.
<i>Esaltare</i> , to exalt.	<i>Saggiare</i> , }
<i>Esaminare</i> , to examine.	<i>Imbarazzare</i> , to embar-
<i>Esperimentare</i> , } to expe-	rass.
<i>Sperimentare</i> , } rience.	<i>Imitare</i> , to imitate.
<i>Esortare</i> , to exhort.	<i>Imparare</i> , to learn.
<i>Fabricare</i> , to build.	
<i>Fatigare</i> , }	to meddle
<i>Travagliare</i> , } to work.	<i>Impacciarsi</i> , } one's self
<i>Lavorare</i> , }	with.
<i>Fermare</i> , to shut, or stop.	<i>Impegnare</i> , } to engage, or
<i>Fidare</i> , to trust.	pawn.
<i>Fischiare</i> , to whistle.	<i>Imprestare</i> , to lend.
<i>Fissare</i> , to fix.	<i>Inclinare</i> , to incline.
<i>Fomentare</i> , to foment.	<i>Incontrare</i> , to meet.
<i>Formare</i> , to form.	<i>Indorare</i> , to gild.
<i>Fortificare</i> , to fortify.	<i>Informare</i> , to inform.
<i>Frequentare</i> , to frequent.	<i>Infiammare</i> , to inflame.
<i>Gelare</i> , to freeze.	<i>Ingannare</i> , to cheat, or
<i>Giocare</i> , to play.	deceive.
<i>Girare</i> , }	<i>Ingiuriare</i> , to abuse.
<i>Voltare</i> , } to turn.	<i>Insegnare</i> , to teach.
<i>Tornare</i> , }	<i>Inventare</i> , to invent.
<i>Gettare</i> , } to throw	<i>Invidiare</i> , to envy.
<i>Buttar via</i> , } away.	<i>Irritare</i> , to irritate.
<i>Giudicare</i> , to judge.	<i>Lagrimare</i> , to weep.
<i>Governare</i> , to govern.	<i>Lamentarsi</i> , to complain.
<i>Gratificare</i> , to gratify.	<i>Lasciare</i> , to leave.
	<i>Lavare</i> , to wash.

Legare,

<i>Legare</i> , to tie.	<i>Parlare</i> , to speak.
<i>Levare</i> , to take away.	<i>Passare</i> , to pass.
<i>Lodare</i> , to praise.	<i>Passeggiare</i> , to walk.
<i>Lusingare</i> , to flatter.	<i>Pensare</i> , to think.
<i>Mandare</i> , to send.	<i>Perdonare</i> , to pardon.
<i>Mancare</i> , to fail.	<i>Pettinare</i> , to comb.
<i>Mangiare</i> , to eat.	<i>Piegare</i> , to fold up.
<i>Marciare</i> , to march.	<i>Pigliare</i> , to take.
<i>Marinare</i> , to pickle.	<i>Pigliare in</i> } to borrow.
<i>Maritarsi</i> , to marry, viz. to take to husband.	<i>prestito</i> , }
<i>Masticare</i> , to chew.	<i>Pizzicare</i> , to pinch.
<i>Meritare</i> , to deserve.	<i>Portare</i> , to carry.
<i>Mescolare</i> , to mix.	<i>Pransare</i> , to dine.
<i>Migliorare</i> , to grow better.	<i>Pregare</i> , to pray.
<i>Minacciare</i> , to threaten.	<i>Preggiare</i> , to prize.
<i>Minchiare</i> , to joke or laugh at.	<i>Predicare</i> , to preach.
<i>Mirare</i> , to look or be- hold.	<i>Preparare</i> , to prepare.
<i>Misurare</i> , to measure.	<i>Presentare</i> , to present.
<i>Mostrare</i> , to shew.	<i>Prestare</i> , or } to lend.
<i>Mutare</i> , to change.	<i>Imprestare</i> , }
<i>Narrare</i> , to relate.	<i>Privare</i> , to deprive.
<i>Natare</i> , to swim.	<i>Procurare</i> , to procure.
<i>Negare</i> , to deny.	<i>Prolungare</i> , to prolong.
<i>Negoziare</i> , to trade.	<i>Procrastinare</i> , to delay.
<i>Nettare</i> , to polish or cleanse.	<i>Pronunziare</i> , } to pro-
<i>Notare</i> , to note.	<i>Pronunciare</i> , } nounce.
<i>Obligare</i> , to oblige.	<i>Provare</i> , to try.
<i>Odiare</i> , to hate.	<i>Rallegrarsi</i> , to rejoice.
<i>Odorare</i> , to smell.	<i>Rassomigliare</i> , to resemble.
<i>Onorare</i> , to honour.	<i>Remediare</i> , to remedy.
<i>Ornare</i> , to adorn.	<i>Replicare</i> , to reply.
<i>Offervare</i> , to observe.	<i>Respirare</i> , to breathe.
<i>Pagare</i> , to pay.	<i>Riccamare</i> , to embroider.
	<i>Ricordare</i> , to remember.
	<i>Risutare</i> , to refuse.
	<i>Riportare</i> , to carry back again.

<i>Riposare</i> , to rest.	<i>Stracciare</i> , to tear.
<i>Rispettare</i> , to respect.	<i>Strapazzare</i> , to use ill.
<i>Ritornare</i> , to return.	<i>Strascinare</i> , to draggle.
<i>Romfiare</i> , to snore.	<i>Studiare</i> , to study.
<i>Rubbare</i> , to steal or rob.	<i>Svegliare</i> , to awake.
<i>Ruinare</i> , to ruin.	<i>Superare</i> , to overcome.
<i>Saltare</i> , to jump.	<i>Supplicare</i> , to beseech.
<i>Salutare</i> , to salute.	<i>Tagliare</i> , to cut.
<i>Sanare</i> , to heal.	<i>Terminare</i> , to finish.
<i>Scaldare</i> , to warm.	<i>Testificare</i> , to testify.
<i>Scaffare</i> , to blot.	<i>Tirare</i> , to pull.
<i>Scherzare</i> , to joke.	<i>Tirare di spada</i> , to fence.
<i>Sdruciolare</i> , to slide.	<i>Toccare</i> , to touch.
<i>Seguitare</i> , to follow.	<i>Tollerare</i> , to suffer.
<i>Separare</i> , to separate.	<i>Trafficare</i> , to trade.
<i>Sgraffiare</i> , to scratch.	<i>Tramare</i> , to plot.
<i>Sgridare</i> , to scold.	<i>Trasportare</i> , to transfer.
<i>Sigillare</i> , to seal.	<i>Trascurare</i> , to neglect.
<i>Soffiare</i> , to blow.	<i>Trattare</i> , to treat.
<i>Sognare</i> , to dream.	<i>Tremare</i> , to tremble.
<i>Solleticare</i> , to tickle.	<i>Triomfare</i> , to triumph.
<i>Sonare</i> , to play a tune upon.	<i>Trovare</i> , to find.
<i>Sopportare</i> , to suffer.	<i>Vacillare</i> , to be wavering.
<i>Sospettare</i> , to suspect.	<i>Vantare</i> , to boast or praise.
<i>Sospirare</i> , to sigh.	<i>Vendicarsi</i> , to revenge.
<i>Sotterrare</i> , to bury.	<i>Viaggiare</i> , to travel.
<i>Sparare</i> , to shoot.	<i>Vietare</i> , to forbid.
<i>Spaventare</i> , to affright.	<i>Visitare</i> , to visit.
<i>Spiegare</i> , to explain.	<i>Volare</i> , to fly.
<i>Sputare</i> , to spit.	<i>Voltare</i> , to turn.
<i>Stampare</i> , to print.	<i>Vomitare</i> , to vomit.
<i>Starnutare</i> , to sneeze.	<i>Usare</i> , to use.
<i>Stimare</i> , to esteem.	<i>Usurare</i> , to usurp.
	&c. &c.

Of Regular Verbs in *ire* conjugated like *dormire*,
to sleep.

Aprire, to open. *Pentirsi*, to repent.

Bollire, to boil. *Salire*, to ascend.

Consentire, to consent. *Seguire*, to follow.

Convertire, to convert. *Servire*, to serve.

Coprire, to cover. *Soffrire*, to suffer.

Cucire, to sew. *Sortire*, to go out.

Fuggire, to run away. *Vestire*, to dress.

Mentire, to lie. *Uscire*, to go out.

Morire, to die. *Udire*, to hear.

Partire, to depart.

Note, The Verbs *aprire*, and *coprire*, may be reckoned among the Irregular Verbs, because of the different Terminations they may have in some of the Tenses, as may be observed in the Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation, and their Participles, as well as that of *morire* and *soffrire*, always differ from the Regular ones making *aperto*, opened; *coperto*, covered; *morto*, dead; and *sosferto*, suffered.

Also the Verbs *salire*, *udire*, and *uscire*, may be called Irregular, as you shall observe in its proper place.

Of the Irregular Verbs.

IRREGULAR Verbs are those whose Conjugation does not follow the general Rule either by different Termination, or for want of some of their Moods, Tenses, or Persons.

Note, That the Verbs are irregular, some in the Present, some in the Preter Definites, and in the Future and Participle.

The Present of the Conjunctive is easily formed in the Verbs of the Second and Third Conjugations :

tions : For it is a general rule that all the First Persons Singular of the Indicative Mood, in the Verbs both Regular and Irregular, always terminate in *o*, and by changing this *o* into *a*, you'll form the Present of the Conjunctive, as *vedere*, *vedo*, *veda*; *tenere*, *tengo*, *tenga*; *dormire*, *dormo*, *dorma*; *uscire*, *esco*, *esca*.

Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation.

THIS Conjugation has only four irregular Verbs, viz. *andare*, to go; *dare*, to give; *fare*, to do; *stare*, to dwell, stand or be.

Note, That when the Verbs are irregular in the Present of the Indicative Mood, they are also irregular in the Present of the Imperative and Conjunctive.

Andare, to go.

This Verb is irregular only in the Present Tenses.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io vo* or *vado*, I go.

Tu vai, thou goest.

Egli va, he goes.

Plur. *Noi andiamo*, we go.

Voi andate, ye go.

Eglino vanno, they go.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Io andavo*, I did go or was going.

Tu andavi, thou didst go, &c.

Egli andava, he did go, &c.

Plur. *Noi andavamo*, we did go, &c.

Voi andavate, ye did go, &c.

Eglino andavano, they did go, &c.

Perfect

*Perfect Definite.*Sing. *Io andai*, I went.*Tu andasti*, thou wentest.*Egli andò*, he went.Plur. *Noi andammo*, we went.*Voi andaste*, ye went.*Eglino andarono*, they went.*Preterperfect.*Sing. *Io sono andato*, I am gone.*Tu sei andato*, thou art gone.*Egli è andato*, he is gone.Plur. *Noi siamo andati*, we are gone.*Voi siete andati*, ye are gone.*Eglino sono andati*, they are gone.*First Preterpluperfect.*Sing. *Io ero andato*, I was gone.*Tu eri andato*, thou wast gone.*Egli era andato*, he was gone.Plur. *Noi erámo andati*, we were gone.*Voi eráte andati*, ye are gone.*Eglino erano andati*, they are gone.*Second Preterpluperfect.*Sing. *Io fui andato*, I was gone.*Tu fosti andato*, thou wast gone.*Egli fu andato*, he was gone.Plur. *Noi fummo andati*, we were gone.*Voi foste andati*, ye were gone.*Eglino furono andati*, they were gone.*Future.*

Future.

- Sing. *Io anderò*, I shall or will go.
Tu anderai, thou shalt or, &c.
Egli anderà, he shall or, &c.
Plur. *Noi anderemo*, we shall or, &c.
Voi anderete, ye shall or, &c.
Eglino anderanno, they shall or, &c.

Imperative.

- Sing. *Va*, go thou.
Vada, let him go.
Plur. *Andiamo*, let us go.
Andate, go ye.
Vadano, let them go.

Conjunctive Present Tense.

- Sing. *Che io vada*, that I may go.
Che tu vada, that thou mayst go.
Che egli vada, that he may go.
Plur. *Che noi andiamo*, that we go.
Che voi andiate, that ye go.
Che eglino vadano, that they go.

First Preterimperfect.

- Sing. *Se io andassi*, if I should, would or could go.
Se tu andassi, if thou shouldst or, &c.
Se egli andasse, if he should or, &c.
Plur. *Se noi andassimo*, if we should or, &c.
Se voi andaste, if ye should or, &c.
Se eglino andassero, if they should or, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing. *Io anderei*, I should, would or could go.

Tu andresti, thou shouldst, &c.

Egli andrebbe, he should, &c.

Plur. *Noi andremmo*, we should, &c.

Voi andreste, ye should, &c.

Eglino andrebbero, they should, &c.

Preterperfect.

Sing. *Che io sia andato*, that I be gone.

Che tu sia andato, that thou be gone.

Che egli sia andato, that he be gone.

Plur. *Che noi siamo andati*, that we be gone.

Che voi siate andati, that ye be gone.

Che eglino siano andati, that they be gone.

First Preterpluperfect.

Sing. *Se io fossi andato*, if I were gone.

Se tu fossi andato, if thou wert gone.

Se egli fosse andato, if he were gone.

Plur. *Se noi fossimo andati*, if we were gone.

Se voi foste andati, if ye were gone.

Se eglino fossero andati, if they were gone.

Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing. *Io sarei andato*, I should, would or could be gone.

Tu saresti andato, thou shouldst, &c.

Egli sarebbe andato, he should, &c.

Plur. *Noi saremmo andati*, we should, &c.

Voi sareste andati, ye should, &c.

Eglino sarebbero andati, they should, &c.

Future.

Future.

- Sing. *Io sarò andato*, I shall be gone.
Tu sarai andato, thou shalt be gone.
Egli sarà andato, he shall be gone.
 Plur. *Noi saremo andati*, we shall be gone.
Voi sarete andati, ye shall be gone.
Eglino saranno andati, they shall be gone.

Infinitive. *Andare*, to go.

Preterperfect. *Essere andato*, to be gone.

Gerund. *Andando*, going.

Essendo andato, being gone.

Participle. *Andato*, gone.

Conjugation of the Verb dare, to give.

Indicative Present.

THIS Verb is Irregular in the Present and Definite Tenses.

- Sing. *Io do*, I give.
Tu dai, thou givest.
Egli dà, he gives.
 Plur. *Noi diamo*, we give.
Voi date, ye give.
Eglino danno, they give.

Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io davo*, I did give.
Tu davi, thou didst give.
Egli dava, he did give.
 Plur. *Noi davamo*, we did give.
Voi davate, ye did give.
Eglino davano, they did give.

Perfect

*Perfect Definite.*Sing. *Io diedi or detti*, I did give.*Tu desti*, thou didst give.*Egli diede diè or dette*, he did give.Plur. *Noi demmo*, we did give.*Voi deste*, ye did give.*Eglino diedero or dettero*, they did give.*Preterperfect.*Sing. *Io ho dato*, I have given, &c.*First Pluperfect.*Sing. *Io havevo dato*, I had given, &c.*Second Pluperfect.*Sing. *Io ebbi dato*, I had given, &c.*Future.*Sing. *Io darò*, I shall or will give.*Tu darai*, thou shalt or, &c.*Egli darà*, he shall or, &c.Plur. *Noi daremo*, we shall or, &c.*Voi darete*, ye shall or, &c.*Eglino daranno*, they shall or, &c.*Imperative.*Sing. *Dà*, give thou.*Dia*, let him give.Plur. *Diàmo*, give ye.*Date*, give ye.*Diano*, let them give.*Conjunctive*

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io dia*, that I give or may give.

Che tu dia, that thou givest or, &c.

Che egli dia, that he giveth or, &c.

Plur. *Che noi diamo*, that we give or, &c.

Che voi diate, that ye give or, &c.

Che eglino diano, that they give or, &c.

First Imperfect.

Sing. *Se io dessi*, if I should could or would give.

Se tu dessi, if thou shouldst or, &c.

Se egli desse, if he should or, &c.

Plur. *Se noi dessimo*, if we should or, &c.

Se voi deste, if ye should or, &c.

Se eglino dessero, if they should or, &c.

Second Imperfect.

Sing. *Io darei*, I should would or could give.

Tu daresti, thou shouldst, &c.

Egli darebbe, he should or, &c.

Plur. *Noi daremmo*, we should or, &c.

Voi daresteste, ye should or, &c.

Eglino darébbero, they should or, &c.

Preterperfect. *Che io abbia dato*, that I have given.

First Pluperfect. *Se io avessi dato*, if I should or would have given.

Second Pluperfect. *Io averés dato*, I should or would have given.

Future. *Io averò dato*, I shall have given.

Infinitive Present. *Dare*, to give.

Preterperfect. *Avere dato*, to have given.

Gerund. *Dando*, giving.

Avendo dato, having given.

Participle. *Dato*, given.

N

Conjuga-

178 THE ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

Conjugation of the Verb fare, to do or make.

THIS Verb is Irregular in the Present and Definite Tenses, and in the Participle.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io fo*, I do or make.

Tu fai, thou doest.

Egli fa, he doth.

Plur. *Noi facciamo*, we do.

Voi fate, ye do.

Eglino fanno, they do.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Io facevo*, I was doing.

Tu facevi, thou wast doing.

Egli faceva, he was doing.

Plur. *Noi facevamo*, we were doing.

Voi facevate, ye were doing.

Eglino facevano, they were doing.

Perfect Definite.

Sing. *Io feci*, I did.

Tu facesti, thou didst.

Egli fece, he did.

Plur. *Noi facemmo*, we did.

Voi faceste, ye did.

Eglino fecero, they did.

Preterperfect. *Io ho fatto*, I have done.

First Pluperfect. *Io avevo fatto*, I had done.

Second Pluperf. *Io ebbi fatto*, I had done.

Future. *Io farò*, I shall or will do.

Imperative.

Imperative.

Sing. *Fa*, do thou.*Faccia*, let him doPlur. *Facciâmo*, let us do.*Fate*, do ye.*Facciano*, let them do.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io faccia*, that I may do.*Che tu faccia*, that thou mayst do.*Che egli faccia*, that he may do.Plur. *Che noi facciâmo*, that we may do.*Che voi facciâte*, that ye may do.*Che eglino facciano*, that they may do.First Imperfect. *Se io facessi*, if I should
would or could do.Second Imperfect. *Io farei*, I should would or
could do.Preterperfect. *Che io abbia fatto*, that I
have done.First Pluperfect. *Se io avessi fatto*, if I had
done.Second Pluperf. *Io averei fatto*, I should
have done.Future. *Io averò fatto*, I should
have done.Infinitive Present. *Fare*, to do or make.Preterperfect. *Avere fatto*, to have done.Gerund. *Facendo*, doing or making.
Avendo fatto, having done
or made.Participle. *Fatto*, done or made.

*Conjugation of the Verb stare, to live or to be.**Indicative Present.*Sing. *Io sto*, I live or I am.*Tu stai*, thou livest or &c.*Egli sta*, he lives or, &c.Plur. *Noi stiamo*, we live or, &c.*Voi state*, ye live or, &c.*Eglino stanno*, they live or, &c.Imperfect. *Io stavo*, &c. I lived or did live, &c.*Preterperfect Definite.*Sing. *Io stetti*, I lived or was.*Tu festi*, thou livedst or, &c.*Egli stette*, he lived or &c.Plur. *Noi stemmo*, we lived or, &c.*Voi steste*, ye lived or, &c.*Eglino stettero*, they lived or &c.Preterperfect. *Io sono stato*, &c. I have lived
or I have been, &c.First Pluperfect. *Io ero stato*, &c. I had lived
or I had been, &c.Second Pluperf. *Io fui stato*, &c. I lived or
I was.Future. *Io starò*, &c. I shall live or
I shall be.*Imperative.*Sing. *Sta*, live thou or be thou.*Stia*, let him live or let him be.Plur. *Stiamo*, let us live or let us be.*State*, live ye or be ye.*Stiano*, let them live or let them be.*Conjunctive*

*Conjunctive Present.*Sing. *Che io sia*, that I live or that I be.*Che tu sia*, that thou livest or, &c.*Che egli sia*, that he lived or, &c.Plur. *Che noi siamo*, that we lived or, &c.*Che voi siate*, that ye lived or, &c.*Che eglino siano*, that they live or, &c.*First Imperfect.*Sing. *Se io stessi*, if I lived or I was.*Se tu stessi*, if thou livedst or, &c.*Se egli stesse*, if he lived or, &c.Plur. *Se noi stessimo*, if we lived or, &c.*Se voi steste*, if ye lived or, &c.*Se eglino stessero*, if they lived or, &c.Second Imperfect. *Io starei*, &c. I should live or
I should be, &c.Preterperfect. *Che io sia stato*, &c. that I
have lived, &c.First Preterplup. *Se io fossi stato*, &c. if I had
lived or been, &c.Second Preterpl. *Io sarei stato*, &c. I should have
lived or should have been.Future. *Io sarò stato*, &c. I shall have
lived or shall have been.Infinitive. *Stare*, to live or to be,Preterperfect. *Affere stato*, to have lived or
to have been.Gerund. *Stando*, living or being.*Essendo stato*, having lived
or having been.Participle. *Stato*, lived or been.

Observations on the above four Irregular Verbs in are.

IN these four Verbs the Second Person of the Present of the Indicative Mood terminates in *ai*, as *dai, fai, vai, stai*; and the Third Plural in *anno*, as *danno, fanno, vanno, stanno*; and not in *ano*, as in the other Verbs of the first Regular Conjugation.

The Future does not terminate in *erò*, but in *arò*, therefore we must say *darò, farò, starò*; and not *derò, ferò, sterò*; except *andare*, which makes *anderò*.

The Third Persons Singular of these four Verbs end in *a* in the Present of the Conjunctive, as *dia, stia, vada, faccia*; whereas the other Verbs of the first Conjugation end in *i*.

Dare, fare, and stare, make *dessi, facessi, and stessi*, in the first and second Persons Singular of the first Imperfect of the Conjunctive Mood, and not *dassi, faciassi, and stassi*.

Although the Verb *fare* and its Compounds, as *disfare*, to undo; *risare*, to do again; *contrafare*, to counterfeit, &c. are placed among the Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation; nevertheless, partaking of the Latin analogy, they are declined like the Verbs of the second Conjugation, since they are nothing else but a contraction of the Latin Verb *facere*, as may be seen by the Syllable *ce*, which is in the most part of all its Tenses, as *facevo, faceffi, &c.* which Syllables are taken from the Latin Verb; moreover if they were of the first

first Conjugation, the Preterimperfect of the Indicative Mood ought to be *facevo* or *favo* in the First Person Singular; *facevi* or *favi* in the Second, and *faceva* or *fava* in the Third; and not *facevo*, *facevi*, *faceva*.

The Participle *fatto* still confirms what I have said; for it is certain that all the Participles of the first Conjugation are terminated in *ato*, and not in *atto*.

The Ancients used to conjugate the Verb *andare* as a Regular Verb like *amare*, saying *io ando*, *tu andi*, *egli anda*, &c. but this is quite obsolete.

The First Person of the Indicative Mood, *vado*, instead of *vo*, we find very seldom used in prose, though frequently in verse.

Note, When the Verb *andare*, or any other Verb of Motion, is followed by an Infinitive, we always put the Particle *a* or *ad* between them. Example, *andare a vedere*, go to see; *venite ad ajutarmi*, come to help me, &c.

Very often the Verbs *andare* and *stare* are used before some Gerunds in Italian, and express the Action with more grace and strength than the Verb of the Gerund otherwise would do, both of which are expressed in English by the Verb *to be*, *essere* in Italian. Example, *io vo cercando* or *sto cercando*, I am seeking; *io vo cogliendo* or *sto cogliendo*, I am gathering; which are more emphatic than *io cerco*, I seek; *io coglio*, I gather; the same may be said of the Preterimperfect, as *io andavo cercando* or *stavo cercando*, I was seeking; *io andavo cogliendo* or *stavo cogliendo*, I was gathering, &c.

But take notice, that the Verb *stare* before the Gerunds (according to the above examples) is more frequent than the Verb *andare*; whereas with the latter you may make a mistake, but never with the former, because some Gerunds do not bear the Verb *andare* before them, as being inconsistent with the language; so that we cannot say *io vo scrivendo*, but *io sto scrivendo*, I am writing; nor *io vo dormendo*, but *io sto dormendo*, I am sleeping; *io stavo scrivendo*, I was writing; *io stavo dormendo*, I was sleeping.

The following English expressions; *I am going to*, &c. *I was going to*, &c. are often expressed in Italian by changing the English Verb *to be* into *stare*, and the English Gerund *going* into the Preposition *per*, followed by the Infinitive of the Verb. Example, *sto per scrivere*, I am going to write; *stavo per dirvelo*, I was going to tell it ye, &c.

But if the English Gerund, *going*, shews the Motion of going, either to a person, to bed, or to any place, we say, *sto per andare dal, dalla* or *al, alla* or *in*, &c. according to the former rules of the peculiarity of the Italian language, &c. p. 72. Example, *sto per andare dal Re*, I am going to the King; *dalla Regina*, to the Queen; *al giardino*, to the garden; *alla chiesa*, to church; *in Italia*, into Italy, &c.

Of the Irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation.

THERE are two sorts of Verbs in *ere*, one of which has the last Syllable but one long; as *avére, cadére, temere*, &c. the other short; as *crédere, leggere, scrivere*, &c.

There are twenty-two Verbs that have the Infinitive in *ére* long, viz.

INFINITIVE,	PRESENT TENSE.	PRET. DEFIN.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>Avére</i> , to have;	<i>ho</i> ,	<i>ebbi</i> ,	<i>avuto</i> .
<i>Cadére</i> , to fall;	<i>cado</i> ,	<i>caddi</i> ,	<i>caduto</i> .
<i>Calére</i> , to care;	an Impersonal Verb.		
<i>Capére</i> , to contain;	a Verb absolute.		
<i>Dovére</i> , to owe;	<i>devo</i> ,	<i>dovei</i> ,	<i>dovuto</i> .
<i>Dolére</i> , to pain or grieve;	<i>doglio</i> ,	<i>dolsi</i> ,	<i>doluto</i> .
<i>Giacére</i> , to lay down;	<i>giaccio</i> ,	<i>giacqui</i> ,	<i>giaciuto</i> .
<i>Godére</i> , to rejoice;	<i>godo</i> ,	<i>godei</i> ,	<i>goduto</i> .
<i>Parére</i> , to seem;	<i>pajo</i> ,	<i>parvi</i> ,	<i>parso</i> .
<i>Piacére</i> , to please;	<i>piaccio</i> ,	<i>piacqui</i> ,	<i>piaciuto</i> .
<i>Persuadére</i> , to persuade;	<i>persuado</i> ,	<i>persuasi</i> ,	<i>persuaso</i> .
<i>Potére</i> , to be able;	<i>posso</i> ,	<i>potei</i> ,	<i>potuto</i> .
<i>Rimanére</i> , to remain;	<i>rimango</i> ,	<i>rimasi</i> ,	<i>rimaso</i> .
<i>Sapére</i> , to know by heart;	<i>so</i> ,	<i>seppi</i> ,	<i>saputo</i> .
<i>Sedére</i> , to sit;	<i>sedo</i> ,	<i>sedei</i> ,	<i>seduto</i> .
<i>Solére</i> , to be used;	<i>soglio</i> ,		<i>solito</i> .
<i>Tacére</i> , to be silent;	<i>taccio</i> ,	<i>tacqui</i> ,	<i>taciuto</i> .
<i>Tenére</i> , to hold;	<i>tengo</i> ,	<i>tenni</i> ,	<i>tenuto</i> .
<i>Temére</i> , to fear;	<i>temo</i> ,	<i>temei</i> ,	<i>temuto</i> .
<i>Valére</i> , to be worth;	<i>vaglio</i> ,	<i>valsi</i> ,	<i>valuto</i> .
<i>Vedére</i> , to see;	<i>vedo</i> ,	<i>viddi</i> ,	<i>veduto</i> .
<i>Volére</i> , to be willing;	<i>voglio</i> ,	<i>volli</i> ,	<i>voluto</i> .

The Compounds of these Verbs make *ère* also long as *riavère*, *ricadère*, *ritenère*, *appartenère*, *dispiacère*, and are conjugated as the simple ones.

Of these twenty-two Verbs, only three are Regular, *viz.* *godère*, *sedère*, and *temère*, as I have already observed in the Collection of all the Regular Verbs of the Second Conjugation, p. 169.

As to the others, some are Irregular in the Present Tense, some in the Preterperfect Definite and Future, and some in the Participle.—But take notice that the Conjugation of the Verbs *calère* and *capère* are not much used in our language.

Of the Conjugations of Verbs in ère long.

Piacere, to please.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

Sing. *Io piaccio*, I please.

Tu piaci, thou pleasest.

Egli piace, he pleaseth.

Plur. *Noi piacciamo*, we please.

Voi piacete, ye please.

Eglino piacciono, they please.

Imperfect. *Io piacevo*, &c. I pleased or did please, &c.

Definitive.

Sing. *Io piacqui*, I pleased.

Tu piacesti, thou pleasedst.

Egli piacque, he pleased.

Plur. *Noi piacemmo*, we pleased.

Voi piaceste, ye pleased.

Eglino piacquero, they pleased.

Preter-

Preterperfect. *Io ho piaciuto*, I have pleased.

First Pluperf. *Io avevo* } *piaciuto*, I had pleased.

Second Plup. *Io ebbi* }

Future. *Io piacerò*, I shall please, &c.

Imperative.

Sing. *Piaci*, please thou.

Piaccia, let him please.

Plur. *Piacciamo*, let us please.

Piacete, please ye.

Piacciano, let them please.

Conjunctive Present Tense.

Sing. *Che io piaccia*, that I please, &c.

Che tu piaccia, that thou pleasest.

Che egli piaccia, that he pleaseth.

Plur. *Che noi piacciamo*, that we please.

Che voi piacciate, that ye please.

Che eglino piacciano, that they please.

First Imperfect. *Se io piaceffi*, if I pleased.

Second Imperf. *Io piacerei*, I should please, &c.

Preterperfect. *Io abbia piaciuto*, I have pleased, &c.

First Pluperf. *Se io avessi piaciuto*, if I had pleased, &c.

Second Plup. *Io averei piaciuto*, I had pleased, &c.

Future. *Io averò piaciuto*, I shall have pleased, &c.

Infin. Present. *Piacere*, to please.

Preterperfect. *Avere piaciuto*, to have pleased.

Gerund. *Piacendo*, pleasing.

Participle. *Piaciuto*, pleased.

After

After the same Manner conjugate *giacere*, to lie down; *tacere*, to be silent.

Note, That in these three Verbs, where the Letter *c* comes before the two Vowels, the *c* is to be doubled, as *giaccio*, *giaccia*, *giacciamo*, *taccio*, *taccia*, *tacciamo*.

Cadere, to fall.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io cado*, I fall.

Tu cadi, thou fallest.

Egli cade, he falleth.

Plur. *Noi cadiamo*, we fall.

Voi cadete, ye fall.

Eglino cadono, they fall.

Imperfect. *Io cadevo*, I fell or did fall, &c.

Definite.

Sing. *Io caddi*, I fell.

Tu cadesti, thou fellest.

Egli cadde, he fell.

Plur. *Noi cademmo*, we fell.

Voi cadeste, ye fell.

Eglino caddero, they fell.

Preterperfect. *Io sono caduto*, &c. I have fallen, &c.

First Pluperf. *Io ero caduto*, I had fallen, &c.

Second Plup. *Io fui caduto*, I had fallen, &c.

Future. *Io caderò or cadrò*, I shall fall, &c.

Impera-

*Imperative.*Sing. *Cadi*, fall thou.*Cada*, let him fall.Plur. *Cadiamo*, let us fall.*Cadete*, fall ye.*Cadano*, let them fall.*Conjunctive Present.*Sing. *Che io cada*, that I fall, &c.*Che tu cada*, that thou fall, &c.*Che egli cada*, that he falls.Plur. *Che noi cadiamo*, that we fall.*Che voi cadiate*, that ye fall.*Che eglino cadano*, that they fall.First Imperf. *Se io cadessi*, if I fell or should fall.Second Imperf. *Io caderei*, I should fall.Preterperf. *Io sia caduto*, I have fallen.First Pluperf. *Se io fossi caduto*, if I had fallen.Second Plup. *Io sarei caduto*, I had fallen.Future. *Io sarò caduto*, I shall have fallen.Infin. Present. *Cadere*, to fall.Preterperfect. *Essere caduto*, to have fallen.Gerund. *Cadendo*, falling.Participle. *Caduto*, fallen.*Volere*, to be willing.Sing. *Io voglio*, I am.*Tu vuoi*, thou art.*Egli vuole*, thou art.Plur. *Noi vogliamo*, he is.*Voi volete*, ye are.*Eglino vogliono*, they are.

Imper-

Imperfect. *Io volevo, &c.* I was willing, &c.

Definite.

Sing. *Io volli*, I was willing.

Tu volesti, thou wast willing.

Egli volle, he was willing.

Plur. *Noi volemmo*, ye were willing.

Voi voleste, ye were willing.

Eglino vollero, they were willing.

Preterperf. *Io ho voluto, &c.* I have been willing.

First Plup. *Io avevo voluto*, I had been willing.

Sec. Plup. *Io ebbi voluto*, I had been willing.

Future.

Sing. *Io vorrò*, I shall be willing.

Tu vorrai, thou shalt be willing.

Egli vorrà, he shall be willing.

Plur. *Noi vorremo*, we shall be willing.

Voi vorrete, ye shall be willing.

Eglino vorranno, they shall be willing.

There is no Imperative.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io voglia*, that I be willing.

Che tu voglia, that thou be willing.

Che egli voglia, that he be willing.

Plur. *Che noi vogliamo*, that we be willing.

Che voi vogliate, that ye be willing.

Che eglino vogliano, that they be willing.

First Imperf. *Se io volessi*, if I should would or could be willing, &c.

Second Imperf. *Io vorrei*, I should be willing.

Preterperfect. *Io abbia voluto*, I have been willing, &c.

First

First Pluperf. *Se io avessi voluto*, if I had been willing, &c.

Second Plup. *Io averei voluto*, I had been willing, &c.

Future. *Io avrò voluto*, I shall have been willing, &c.

Infin. Present. *Valere*, to be willing.

Preterperf. *Avere voluto*, to have been willing.

Gerund. *Volendo*, being willing.

Participle. *Voluto*, been willing.

Dolere, to grieve.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io mi dolgo* or *doglio*, I grieve.

Tu ti duoli, thou grieveest.

Egli si duole, he grieveth.

Plur. *Noi ci doliamo*, we grieve.

Voi vi dolete, ye grieve.

Eglino si dolgono or *dogliono*, they grieve.

Imperf. *Io mi doleva*, I grieved or did grieve.

Definite.

Sing. *Io mi dolsi*, I grieved.

Tu ti dolesti, thou grieveest.

Egli si dolse, he grieved.

Plur. *Noi ci dolemmo*, we grieved.

Voi vi dolesti, ye grieved.

Eglino si dolsero, they grieved.

Preterperfect. *Io mi sono doluto*, I have grieved.

First Pluper. *Io mi ero doluto*, I had grieved.

Second Plup. *Io mi fui doluto*, I had grieved.

Future.

Future.

Sing. *Io mi dorrò*, I shall be grieved.

Tu ti dorrai, thou shalt be grieved.

Egli si dorrà, he shall grieve.

Plur. *Noi ci dorremo*, we shall grieve.

Voi vi dorrete, ye shall grieve.

Eglino si dorranno, they shall grieve.

Imperative.

Sing. *Duolti* or *duoliti*, grieve thou.

Dolgasi, let him grieve.

Plur. *Dogliamoci*, let us grieve.

Doatevi, grieve ye.

Dolgansi, let them grieve.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io mi dolga*, that I grieve.

Che tu ti dolga, that thou grieveest.

Che egli si dolga, that he grieveth.

Plur. *Che noi ci dogliamo*, that we grieve.

Che voi vi dogliate, that ye grieve.

Che eglino si dolgano, that they grieve.

First Imperfect. *Se io mi dolessi*, if I grieved, &c.

Second Imperf. *Io mi dorrei*, I should grieve, &c.

Preterperfect. *Io mi sia doluto*, I have grieved, &c.

First Pluperf. *Se io mi fossi doluto*, if I had grieved.

Second Pluperf. *Io mi sarei doluto*, I had grieved.

Future. *Io mi farò doluto*, I shall have grieved, &c.

Infin. Present. *Dolersi*, to grieve.

Preterperf. *Essersi doluto*, to have grieved.

Gerund. *Dolendosi*, grieving.

Participle. *Doluto*, grieved.

Note,

Note, That the Verbs whose Infinitives end in *lere*, always take a *g* before *l*, and after the *l* and *i*, in those Tenses where the letters *o* and *a* follow the *i*; namely, in the First Person Singular, and in the First and Third Plural of the Present of the Indicative Mood; as also in all the Persons of the Present of the Conjunctive Mood; as *voglio, vogliono, voglia, &c. soglio, sogliono, soglia, &c. dolere* makes *dolgo* and *doglio*: And in the Future and Second Imperfect, they change the *le* into *r*, as *volere, vorrò, &c. vorrei, &c. dolere, dorro, &c. dorrei, &c.*

Remember that *dolere* also signifies to have any pain, and then it is one of the Third Sort of Impersonal Verbs, and has only the Third Persons Singular and Plural, through all Moods and Tenses, and is conjugated with the Pronouns Conjunctives. Example, *Mi duole la testa*, my head aches, or I have a pain in my head: *Mi dolgono le braccia*, my arms ach, or I have a pain in my arms, &c. as you will better understand when you come to the Impersonal Verbs.

Take Notice, that the above Verb *dolersi*, when it means to be sorry for, is not so frequently made use of in Italian as the Verb *dispiacersi*, to be displeased or sorry for; so that it is not usual to say *mi duole della vostra disgrazia*, but *mi dispiace della vostra disgrazia*, I am sorry for your misfortune.

Solere, to be used.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io soglio*, I am used.

Tu suoli, thou art used.

Egli suole, he is used.

Plur. *Noi sogliamo*, we are used.

Voi solete, ye are used.

Eglino sogliono, they are used.

Imperfect. *Io solevo*, I was used, &c.

Note, This Verb has no Definite nor Future Tense.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io soglia*, that I be used.

Che tu soglia, that thou be used.

Che egli soglia, that he be used.

Plur. *Che noi sogliamo*, that we be used.

Che voi sogliate, that ye be used.

Che eglino sogliano, that they be used.

First Imperfect. *Se io soleffi*, if I were used, &c.

Infin. Present. *Solere*, to be used.

Preterperfect. *Essere solito*, to be used.

Gerund. *Solendo* or *essendo solito*, being used.

Participle. *Solito*, used.

Note, That the above Verb is also conjugated in Italian with the second Auxiliary Verb *essere*, to be, joined with its Participle the same as in English, as *io soglio* or *sono solito*, I am used, *tu suoli* or *sei solito*, *egli suole* or *è solito*, &c.

Tenere,

Tenere, to hold.

Indicative Mood Present Tense.

Sing. *Io tengo*, I hold.

Tu tieni, thou holdest.

Egli tiene, he holdeth.

Plur. *Noi teniamo*, we hold.

Voi tenete, ye hold.

Eglino tengono, they hold.

Definite.

Sing. *Io tenni*, I held.

Tu teneſti, thou heldest.

Egli tenne, he held.

Plur. *Noi tenemmo*, we held.

Voi teneste, ye held.

Eglino tennero, they held.

Future.

Sing. *Io terrò*, I shall hold.

Tu terrai, thou shalt hold.

Egli terrà, he shall hold.

Plur. *Noi terremo*, we shall hold.

Voi terrete, ye shall hold.

Eglino terranno, they shall hold.

Imperative.

Sing. *Tieni*, hold thou.

Tenga, let him hold.

Plur. *Teniamo*, let us hold.

Tenete, hold ye.

Tengano, let them hold.

Conjunctive. Present.

- Sing. *Che io tenga*, that I hold.
Che tu tenga, that thou hold.
Che egli tenga, that he hold.
 Plur. *Che noi teniamo*, that we hold.
Che voi teniate, that ye hold.
Che eglino tengano, that they hold.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io tenessi*, if I held.
Se tu tenessi, if thou heldest.
Se egli tenesse, if he held.
 Plur. *Se noi tenessimo*, if we held.
Se voi teneste, if ye held.
Se eglino tenessero, if they held.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io terrei*, I should hold.
Tu terresti, thou shouldst hold.
Egli terrebbe, he should hold.
 Plur. *Noi terremmo*, we should hold.
Voi terreste, ye should hold.
Eglino terrebbero, they should hold.

Infinitive Present. *Tenere*, to hold.

Preterperfect. *Avere tenuto*, to have held.

Gerund. *Tenendo*, holding.

Participle. *Tenuto*, held.

Though the natural Signification of the above Verb is *to hold*, yet it is often elegantly used in Italian for the Verb *avere*, to have. Example, *tengo molti servi*, I have several servants; *tengo una gran famiglia*, I have a large family; *tengo alcuni libri*,

libri, I have some books; *non ne tengo*, I have none of it or them, &c. instead of *ho molti servi*, *ho una gran famiglia*.

Sapere, to know by heart.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io so*, I know.

Tu sai, thou knowest.

Egli sa, he knoweth.

Plur. *Noi sappiamo*, we know.

Voi sapete, ye know.

Eglino sanno, they know.

Imperf. *Io sapevo*, I did know, &c.

Definite.

Sing. *Io seppi*, I knew.

Tu sapesti, thou knewest.

Egli seppe, he knew.

Plur. *Noi sapemmo*, we knew.

Voi sapeste, ye knew.

Eglino seppero, they knew.

Future.

Sing. *Io saprò*, I shall know.

Tu saprai, thou shalt know.

Egli saprà, he shall know.

Plur. *Noi sapremo*, we shall know.

Voi saprete, ye shall know.

Eglino sapranno, they shall know.

Imperative.

Sing. *Sappi*, know thou.

Sappia, let him know.

Plur. *Sappiamo*, let us know.

Sappiate, know ye.

Sappiano, let them know.

Conjunctive Present.

- Sing. *Che io sappia*, that I know.
Che tu sappia, that thou knowest.
Che egli sappia, that he know.
 Plur. *Che noi sappiamo*, that we know.
Che voi sappiate, that ye know.
Che eglino sappiano, that they know.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io sapessi*, if I knew.
Se tu sapessi, if thou knewest.
Se egli sapesse, if he knew.
 Plur. *Se noi sapessimo*, if we knew.
Se voi sapeste, if ye knew.
Se eglino sapessero, if they knew.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io saperei* or *saprei*, I should know.
Tu saperesti or *sapresti*, thou shouldst know.
Egli saperebbe or *saprebbe*, he should know.
 Plur. *Noi saperemmo* or *sapremmo*, we should know.
Voi sapereste or *sapreste*, ye should know.
Eglino saperebbero or *saprebbero*, they should know.

Infin. Present. *Sapere*, to know.

Preterperfect. *Avere saputo*, to have known.

Gerund. *Sapendo*, knowing.

Participle. *Saputo*, known.

Potere,

Potere, to be able.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io posso*, I am able.

Tu puoi, thou art able.

Egli può, he is able.

Plur. *Noi possiamo*, we are able.

Voi potete, ye are able.

Eglino possono, they are able.

Imperfect. *Io potevo*, I was able, &c.

Definite.

Sing. *Io potai* or *potetti*, I have been able.

Tu potesti, thou hast been able.

Egli potè or *potette*, he has been able.

Plur. *Noi potemmo*, we have been able.

Voi poteste, ye have been able.

Eglino poterano or *potettero*, they have been able.

Future. *Io potrò* or *poterò*, I shall be able, &c.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io possa*, that I may be able.

Che tu possa, that thou mayst be able.

Che egli possa, that he may be able.

Plur. *Che noi possiamo*, that we may be able.

Che voi possiate, that ye may be able.

Che eglino possano, that they may be able.

First Imperfect.

Sing. *Se io potessi*, if I could be able.

Se tu potessi, if thou couldst be able.

Se egli potesse, if he could be able.

Plur. *Se noi potessimo*, if we could be able.

Se voi poteste, if ye could be able.

Se eglino potessero, if they could be able.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io poterei* or *potrei*, I could be able.
Tu potresti or *potresti*, thou couldst be able.
Egli potrebbe or *potrebbe*, he could be able.
Plur. *Noi potremmo* or *potremmo*, we could be able.
Voi potreste or *potreste*, ye could be able.
Eglino potrebbero or *potrebbero*, they could be able.
Infinitive Pres. *Potere*, to be able.
Preterperfect. *Avere potuto*, to have been able.
Gerund. *Potendo*, being able.
Participle. *Potuto*, been able.

Rimanere, to remain.

Indicative Present.

- Sing. *Io rimango*, I remain.
Tu rimani, thou remainest.
Egli rimane, he remains.
Plur. *Noi rimaniamo*, we remain.
Voi rimanete, ye remain.
Eglino rimangono, they remain.
Imperf. *Io rimanevo*, I remained or did remain, &c.

Definite.

- Sing. *Io rimasi*, I remained.
Tu rimanesti, thou remainedst.
Egli rimase, he did remain.
Plur. *Noi rimanemmo*, we remained.
Voi rimaneste, ye remained.
Eglino rimasero, they remained.

Future.

Future.

- Sing. *Io rimarrò*, I shall remain.
Tu rimarrai, thou shalt remain.
Egli rimarrà, he shall remain.
- Plur. *Noi rimareremo*, we shall remain.
Voi rimarrete, ye shall remain.
Eglino rimarranno, they shall remain.

Imperative.

- Sing. *Rimani*, remain thou.
Rimanga, let him remain.
- Plur. *Rimaniamo*, let us remain.
Rimanete, remain ye.
Rimàngano, let them remain.

Conjunctive Present.

- Sing. *Che io rimanga*, that I may remain.
Che tu rimanga, that thou may remain.
Che egli rimanga, that he may remain.
- Plur. *Che noi rimaniamo*, that we may remain.
Che voi rimaniate, that ye may remain.
Che eglino rimàngano, that they may remain.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io rimanessi*, if I remained.
Se tu rimanessi, if thou remained.
Se egli rimanesse, if he remained.
- Plur. *Se noi rimanessimo*, if we remained.
Se voi rimaneste, if ye remained.
Se eglino rimanessero, if they remained.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io rimarrei*, I should remain.
Tu rimarresti, thou shouldst remain.
Egli rimarrebbe, he should remain.
- Plur. *Noi rimarremmo*, we should remain.
Voi rimarreste, ye should remain.
Eglino rimarrebbero, they should remain.
- Infinitive Pres. *Rimanere*, to remain.
 Preterperfect. *Essere rimasto*, to have remained.
 Gerund. *Rimanendo*, remaining.
 Participle. *Rimasto* or *rimasto*, remained.

Parere, to seem.*Indicative Present.*

- Sing. *Io pajo*, I seem.
Tu pari, thou seemest.
Egli pare, he seemeth.
- Plur. *Noi pajamo*, we seem.
Voi parete, ye seem.
Eglino pajono, they seem.
- Imperfect. *Io parevo*, I seemed or did seem, &c.

Definite.

- Sing. *Io parvi*, I seemed.
Tu paresti, thou seemedst.
Egli parve, he seemed.
- Plur. *Noi paremmo*, we seemed.
Voi pareste, ye seemed.
Eglino parvero, they seemed.

Future.

Future.

- Sing. *Io parrò*, I will seem.
Tu parrai, thou wilt seem.
Egli parrà, he will seem.
 Plur. *Noi parremo*, we will seem.
Voi parrete, ye will seem.
Eglino parranno, they will seem.

Conjunctive Present.

- Sing. *Che io paja*, that I may.
Che tu paja, that thou mayst.
Che egli paja, that he may.
 Plur. *Che noi pajamo*, that we may.
Che voi pajate, that ye may.
Che eglino pajano, that they may.

First Imperfect.

- Sing. *Se io pareffi*, if I seemed.
Se tu pareffi, if thou seemedst.
Se egli pareffe, if he seemed.
 Plur. *Se noi pareffimo*, if we seemed.
Se voi pareste, if ye seemed.
Se eglino pareffero, if they seemed.

Second Imperfect.

- Sing. *Io parrei*, I should seem.
Tu parresti, thou shouldst seem.
Egli parrebbe, he should seem.
 Plur. *Noi parremmo*, we should seem.
Voi parreste, ye should seem.
Eglino parrebbero, they should seem.

Infinitive Pres. *Parere*, to seem.

Preterperfect. *Essere parso*, to have seemed.

Gerund. *Parendo*, seeming.

Participle. *Parso*, seemed.

Dovero,

Dovere, to owe or be obliged.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io devo* or *debbo*, I owe or am obliged.

Tu devi, thou owest or, &c.

Egli deve or *dee*, he oweth or, &c.

Plur. *Noi dobbiamo*, we owe or, &c.

Voi dovete, ye owe or, &c.

Eglino devono or *debbono*, they owe or, &c.

Imperfect. *Io dovevo*, I owed or did owe, &c.

Definite. *Io dovei* or *dovetti*, I owed, &c.

Future. *Io doverò* or *dovrò*, I shall owe or, &c.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io debba*, that I owe or may be obliged.

Che tu debba, that thou owest or, &c.

Che egli debba, that he owes or, &c.

Plur. *Che noi dobbiamo*, that we owe or, &c.

Che voi dobbiate, that ye owe or, &c.

Che eglino debbano, that they owe or, &c.

First Imperfect. *Se io dovessi*, if I owed, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Io doverei* or *dovrei*, I should owe, &c.

Infinitive Present. *Dovere*, to owe or be obliged.

Preterperfect. *Avere dovuto*, to have owed or been obliged.

Gerund. *Dovendo*, owing or obliging.

Participle. *Dovuto*, owed or obliged.

Note, Verbs having the Infinitive in *nere*, where *o* or *a* would regularly follow the *n*, take *g* immediately after it; as *rimanere* makes *rimango*, *rimangono*, *rimanga*, *rimangano*, instead of *rimano*, &c. *porre*, to put, and all its compounds; follow the

same rule, since they are nothing else but a contraction of *ponere*.

Of the Irregular Verbs in ere, short.

SOME of these Verbs are Irregular in the Present Tense, the most part in the Perfect Definite, some in the Future, and almost all in the Participle.

The Preterperfect Tense always ends in *ssi* or *ssi*, the Participle in *so* or *to*; but the Definite Tenses of the following Verbs are excepted from this rule; to wit :

Infinitive.	Present.	Defin.	Particip.
<i>Conoscere</i> , to know by sight ;	<i>conosco</i> ,	<i>conobbi</i> ,	<i>conosciuto</i> .
<i>Crescere</i> , to grow ;	<i>cresco</i> ,	<i>crebbi</i> ,	<i>cresciuto</i> .
<i>Nascere</i> , to be born ;	<i>nasco</i> ,	<i>nacqui</i> ,	<i>nato</i> .
<i>Nuocere</i> , to hurt ;	<i>nuoco</i> ,	<i>nocqui</i> ,	<i>nocuto</i> .
<i>Rompere</i> , to break ;	<i>rompo</i> ,	<i>ruppi</i> ,	<i>rotto</i> .

Although this rule is sufficient to shew all the Definite Tenses of the Verbs in *ere* short; yet, for greater facility, I shall here give an alphabetical table of the terminations of their Infinitives, and of the Irregular Tenses formed from them.

Terminations of the Verbs in ere short.

	Present.	Defin.	Particip.
1. in <i>cere</i> , as <i>vincere</i> ,	<i>vinco</i> ,	<i>vinfi</i> ,	<i>vinto</i> .
2. in <i>dere</i> , as <i>ardere</i> ,	<i>ardo</i> ,	<i>arfi</i> ,	<i>arso</i> .
3. in <i>gere</i> , as <i>piangere</i> ,	<i>piango</i> ,	<i>pianfi</i> ,	<i>pianto</i> .
4. in <i>gliere</i> , as <i>cogliere</i> ,	<i>colgo</i> and <i>coglio</i> ,	<i>colfi</i> ,	<i>colto</i> .
5. in <i>here</i> , as <i>trabere</i> ,	{ <i>trao</i> ,	{ <i>trassi</i> ,	{ <i>tratto</i> .
or <i>trarre</i> ,			
6. in <i>lere</i> , as <i>svellere</i> ,	<i>svello</i> ,	<i>svelfi</i> ,	<i>svolto</i> .
			7. in.

	Present.	Defin.	Particip.
7. in <i>mere</i> , as <i>imprimere</i> ,	<i>imprimo</i> ,	<i>impressi</i> ,	<i>impresso</i> .
8. in <i>nere</i> , as <i>ponere</i> ,	<i>pongo</i> ,	<i>posi</i> ,	<i>posto</i> .
9. in <i>ndere</i> , as <i>prendere</i> ,	<i>prendo</i> ,	<i>presi</i> ,	<i>preso</i> .
10. in <i>pere</i> , as <i>rompere</i> ,	<i>rompo</i> ,	<i>ruppi</i> ,	<i>rotto</i> .
11. in <i>rere</i> , as <i>correre</i> ,	<i>corro</i> ,	<i>corsi</i> ,	<i>corso</i> .
12. in <i>tere</i> , as <i>mettere</i> ,	<i>metto</i> ,	<i>mi si</i> ,	<i>messo</i> .
13. in <i>vere</i> , as <i>scrivere</i> ,	<i>scrivo</i> ,	<i>scrissi</i> ,	<i>scritto</i> .

Change all these terminations into *si*, you will find the Preterperfect Definite of all these Verbs. Example, to find the Definite Tense of *vincere*, *torcere*, *ardere*, *prendere*, *piangere*, *rispondere*, change the terminations *cere*, *dere*, *gere*, *ndere*, into *si*, you will have *vin si*, *tor si*, *ar si*, *pres si*, *pian si*, *rispos si*.

But to remove all difficulties about the termination of the Definite Tense, you must observe, that some Verbs double the *s* in the Definite, some not; these following are of the first sort, and all others are of the second.

Infinitive.	Present.	Defin.	Particip.
<i>Addurre</i> , to alledge;	<i>adduco</i> ,	<i>addussi</i> ,	<i>addotto</i> .
<i>Affiggere</i> , to affix;	<i>affiggo</i> ,	<i>affissi</i> ,	<i>affisso</i> .
<i>Affiggere</i> , to afflict;	<i>affiggo</i> ,	<i>affissi</i> ,	<i>affitto</i> .
<i>Ascrivere</i> , to ascribe;	<i>ascrivo</i> ,	<i>ascrissi</i> ,	<i>ascritto</i> .
<i>Attrabere</i> , } to attract;	<i>attrao</i> ,	<i>attrassi</i> ,	<i>attratto</i> .
<i>Attrarre</i> , }			
<i>Commovere</i> , to move;	<i>commovo</i> ,	<i>commossi</i> ,	<i>commosso</i> .
<i>Concedere</i> , to grant;	<i>concedo</i> ,	<i>concessi</i> ,	<i>concesso</i> .
<i>Condurre</i> , to conduct;	<i>conduco</i> ,	<i>condussi</i> ,	<i>condotto</i> .
<i>Construere</i> , to build;	<i>construo</i> ,	<i>construssi</i> ,	<i>construtto</i> .
<i>Contrabere</i> , } to contract;	<i>contrao</i> ,	<i>contraffi</i> ,	<i>contratto</i> .
<i>Contrarre</i> , }			
<i>Correggere</i> , to correct;	<i>correggo</i> ,	<i>corressi</i> ,	<i>corretto</i> .
<i>Cuocere</i> , to cook;	<i>cuoco</i> ,	<i>coffi</i> ,	<i>cotto</i> .
<i>Dirigere</i> , to direct;	<i>diriggo</i> ,	<i>direffi</i> ,	<i>diretto</i> .
			<i>Disrabere</i> ,

Infinitive.	Present.	Defin.	Particip.
<i>Distrabere</i> , } to take off;	<i>distrao</i> ,	<i>distrassi</i> ,	<i>distratto</i> .
<i>Distrarre</i> ,			
<i>Distruuggere</i> , to destroy;	<i>distruggo</i> ,	<i>distrussi</i> ,	<i>distruutto</i> .
<i>Eleggere</i> , to chuse;	<i>eleggo</i> ,	<i>eleffi</i> ,	<i>eletto</i> .
<i>Erigere</i> , to erect;	<i>eriggo</i> ,	<i>eressi</i> ,	<i>eretto</i> .
<i>Esprimere</i> , to express;	<i>esprimo</i> ,	<i>espressi</i> ,	<i>espresso</i> .
<i>Figgere</i> , to thrust in;	<i>figgo</i> ,	<i>fissi</i> ,	<i>fitto</i> .
<i>Friggere</i> , to fry;	<i>friggo</i> ,	<i>frissi</i> ,	<i>fritto</i> .
<i>Introdurre</i> , to introduce;	<i>introduco</i> ,	<i>introduffi</i> ,	<i>introdotta</i> .
<i>Imprimere</i> , to print;	<i>imprimo</i> ,	<i>impressi</i> ,	<i>impresso</i> .
<i>Indurre</i> , to induce;	<i>induco</i> ,	<i>indussi</i> ,	<i>indotta</i> .
<i>Leggere</i> , to read;	<i>leggo</i> ,	<i>lessi</i> ,	<i>letto</i> .
<i>Muovere</i> , to move;	<i>movo</i> ,	<i>moffi</i> ,	<i>mosso</i> .
<i>Negligere</i> , to neglect;	<i>negliggo</i> ,	<i>neglessi</i> ,	<i>negletto</i> .
<i>Opprimere</i> , to oppress;	<i>opprimo</i> ,	<i>oppressi</i> ,	<i>oppresso</i> .
<i>Percuotere</i> , to strike;	<i>percuoto</i> ,	<i>percoffi</i> ,	<i>percosso</i> .
<i>Produrre</i> , to produce;	<i>produco</i> ,	<i>produffi</i> ,	<i>prodotto</i> .
<i>Promovere</i> , to promote;	<i>promovo</i> ,	<i>promossi</i> ,	<i>promosso</i> .
<i>Proteggere</i> , to protect;	<i>protegggo</i> ,	<i>proteffi</i> ,	<i>protetto</i> .
<i>Reggere</i> , to govern;	<i>reggo</i> ,	<i>ressi</i> ,	<i>retto</i> .
<i>Ridurre</i> , to reduce;	<i>riduco</i> ,	<i>ridussi</i> ,	<i>ridotta</i> .
<i>Risflettere</i> , to reflect;	<i>rifletto</i> ,	<i>risfeffi</i> ,	<i>riflesso</i> .
<i>Rimovere</i> , to remove;	<i>rimovo</i> ,	<i>rimossi</i> ,	<i>rimosso</i> .
<i>Riscuotere</i> , to redeem;	<i>riscuoto</i> ,	<i>riscoffi</i> ,	<i>riscosso</i> .
<i>Scrivere</i> , to write;	<i>scrivo</i> ,	<i>scrissi</i> ,	<i>scritto</i> .
<i>Scuotere</i> , to shake;	<i>scuoto</i> ,	<i>scoffi</i> ,	<i>scolto</i> .
<i>Sedurre</i> , to seduce;	<i>seduco</i> ,	<i>sedussi</i> ,	<i>sedotta</i> .
<i>Sopprimere</i> , to suppress;	<i>sopprimo</i> ,	<i>soppresi</i> ,	<i>soppresso</i> .
<i>Struggere</i> , to destroy;	<i>struggo</i> ,	<i>strussi</i> ,	<i>strutto</i> .
<i>Succedere</i> , to succeed;	<i>succedo</i> ,	<i>succeffi</i> ,	<i>successo</i> .
<i>Tradurre</i> , to translate;	<i>traduco</i> ,	<i>tradussi</i> ,	<i>tradotta</i> .
<i>Trasfiggere</i> , to transfix;	<i>traffiggo</i> ,	<i>traffi</i> ,	<i>trafitto</i> .
<i>Trarre</i> , to draw;	<i>trao</i> or <i>traggo</i> ,	<i>trassi</i> ,	<i>tratto</i> .
<i>Trascrivere</i> , to transcribe;	<i>trascrivo</i> ,	<i>trascriffi</i> ,	<i>trascritta</i> .
<i>Vivere</i> , to live;	<i>vivo</i> ,	<i>vissi</i> ,	<i>vissuto</i> .

To conjugate these Verbs with facility, you must remember that the Preterperfect Definite has three Persons regular, and three irregular.

The Three regular Persons are the Second Singular, the First and Second Plural; and the Three irregular are the First and Third Singular, and Third Plural.

And though this Rule be general and easy, yet beginners sometimes mistake one Person for another; but the best way to be certain is to remember that the Second Person of the Preterperfect Definite of all the Verbs, both regular and irregular, is formed of the Infinitive, changing *re* into *sti*; as *vincere, vincesti*; *ardere, ardesti*; *piangere, piangesti*; except *essere*, which makes *festi*.

The First Person Plural is also formed of the Infinitive, changing *re* into *mmo*, as *amare, amammo*; *credere, credemmo*; *leggere, leggemmo*, &c.

The Second Person Plural is formed of the Second Singular, changing *i* into *e*, as *amasti, amaste*; *credesti, credeste*; *leggesti, leggeste*.

The First Person Singular of the Irregular Verbs is always terminated in *i*, as *lessi, vinsi, pianfi*, changing *i* into *e* makes the Third Person Singular, as *lesse, vinse, pianse*, and adding *ro* to this last makes the Third Plural, *lessero, vinsero, piansero*.

E X A M P L E.

Lessi, presti; *lesse, prese*; *lessero, presero*; *scrissi, vinsi*; *scrisse, vinse*; *scrissero, vinsero*.

Remember therefore to read these Observations, because they are very useful in conjugating the Irregular Verbs.

Note,

Note, Those Verbs whose Infinitive end in *ggere*, with two *gg*'s, double the *s* in the Definite Tense, and the *t* in the Participle. Example, *leggere*, Infinitive; *lessi*, Definite; *letto*, Participle, &c.

The Verbs whose Infinitive end in *vere*, always double the *s* in the Definite Tense, but in the Participle some double the *s* and some the *t*. Example, *muovere*, *scrivere*, Infinitives; *mossi*, *scrissi*, Definite Tenses; *mosso*, *scritto*, Participles.

The above Rules would be sufficient to shew the Conjugation of Irregular Verbs in *ere* short; yet, for the Scholars greater ease, I have thought proper to explain the Thirteen different Terminations, as in page 205, more at large, by conjugating a Verb of each.

Of the Verbs in cere.

Cuocere, to cook or dress victuals.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io cuoco*, I cook.

Tu cuoci, thou cookest.

Egli cuoce, he cooks.

Plur. *Noi cuociamo*, we cook.

Voi cuocete, ye cook.

Eglino cuocono, they cook.

Imperfect. *Io cuocevo*, I cooked, &c.

Definite.

Sing. *Io cossi*, I cooked.

Tu cuocesti, thou hast cooked.

Egli cosse, he cooked.

Plur. *Noi cuocemmo*, we cooked.

Voi cuoceste, ye cooked.

Eglino cosseno, they cooked.

Future. *Io cuocerò*, &c. I shall cook, &c.

Imperative.

Sing. *Cuoci*, cook thou.

Cuoca, let him cook.

Plur. *Cuociamo*, let us cook.

Cuocete, cook ye.

Cuocano, let them cook.

Conjunct. Pres. *Che io cuoca*, that I may cook, &c.

First Imperfect. *Se io cuocessi*, &c. if I should cook, &c.

Second Imperf. *Io cuocerei*, &c. I should cook, &c.

Infinitive. *Cuocere*, to cook.

Gerund. *Cuocendo*, cooking.

Participle. *Cotto*, cooked.

In the same manner may be conjugated *conducere* or *condurre*, to lead, *conduco*, *condussi*, *condotto*; *rilucere*, to shine, *riluco*, *rilussi*, without a Participle; *torcere*, to twist, *torco*, *torsì*, *torta*; *vincere*, to win, *vico*, *vinfi*, *vinto*.

Of Verbs in dere.

THE Verbs in *dere*, in the Preterperfect Definite, generally make *si*, but few double the *s*, and in the Participle some make *so*, and some *to*, as,

Accendere, to light; *accenda*, *accessi*, *acceso*.

Ardere, to burn; *ardo*, *arfi*, *arso*.

Cbiedere, to ask; *cbiedo*, *cbiesi*, *cbiesto*.

Cbiudere, to shut; *cbiudo*, *cbiufi*, *cbiuso*.

Perdere, to lose; *perdo*, *persi* or *perdei*, *perso* or *perduto*.

Radere, to shave; *rado*, *rasi*, *raso*.

Rendere, to restore; *rendo*, *resi*, *reso*.

<i>Ridere</i> , to laugh ;	<i>rido</i> ,	<i>rifi</i> ,	<i>riso</i> .
<i>Rispondere</i> , to answer ;	<i>rispondo</i> ,	<i>risposi</i> ,	<i>risposto</i> .
<i>Rodere</i> , to gnaw ;	<i>rodo</i> ,	<i>rosi</i> ,	<i>roso</i> .
<i>Scendere</i> , to descend ;	<i>scendo</i> ,	<i>scesi</i> ,	<i>sceso</i> .
<i>Succedere</i> , to succeed ;	<i>succedo</i> ,	<i>successi</i> ,	<i>successo</i> .
<i>Concedere</i> , to grant ;	<i>concedo</i> ,	<i>concessi</i> ,	<i>concesso</i> .

Of Verbs in gere, with a single g.

THE Verbs in *gere*, in their Preterperfect Definite, make *fi*, and in the Participle *to*, except *spargere* that makes *sparsi*.

<i>Cingere</i> , to gird.	<i>cingo</i> ,	<i>pinfi</i> ,	<i>cinto</i> .
<i>Spargere</i> , to spread ;	<i>spargo</i> ,	<i>sparsi</i> ,	<i>sparsi</i> .
<i>Spingere</i> , to thrust ;	<i>spingo</i> ,	<i>spinfi</i> ,	<i>spinto</i> .
<i>Ungere</i> , to anoint ;	<i>ungo</i> ,	<i>unfi</i> ,	<i>unto</i> .
<i>Pargere</i> , to reach ;	<i>pargo</i> ,	<i>porfi</i> ,	<i>porgiuto</i> .

Though the Verbs *distinguere*, to distinguish ; and *estinguere*, to extinguish, do not end in *gere*, but *guere* ; nevertheless they may be added to the above Verbs by reason of their making the Preter Definite in *fi*, and Participle in *to*. Example, *Distinguo*, *distinsi*, *distinto* ; *extinguo*, *estinsi*, *estinto*.

But the Verbs in *argere* and *ergere*, make *so* in the Participle.

<i>Spargere</i> , to spread ;	<i>spargo</i> ,	<i>sparsi</i> ,	<i>sparsi</i> .
<i>Immergere</i> , to plunge ;	<i>immergo</i> ,	<i>immerfi</i> ,	<i>immerso</i> .
<i>Sommergere</i> , to drown ;	<i>sommergo</i> ,	<i>sommerfi</i> ,	<i>sommerso</i> .
Except <i>ergere</i> , to erect ;	<i>ergo</i> ,	<i>erfi</i> ,	<i>erto</i> .

Note, Verbs which have a Vowel before *gere*, ought to be spelt with two *gg*'s in the Infinitive, and two *fs*'s in the Definite, as you have already

observed the difference between the Verbs *cingere*, *spargere*, &c. and *affiggere*, *affliggere*, &c.

Of Verbs in gliere.

Note, That the Verbs in *gliere*, besides the Irregularity of the Definite and Participle, make also a Contraction in the Infinitive Mood, the Future, and the Second Imperfect of the Conjunctive Mood, as *cogliere* or *corre*, to gather; Future, *corrò*; Second Imperfect, *correi*; in the Definite they make *si*, and in the Participle *to*.

Cogliere or *corre*, to gather; *colgo* and *coglio*, *colsi*, *colto*.

Sciogliere or *sciorre*, to lose; *sciolgo* and *scioglio*, *sciolsi*, *sciolto*.

Togliere or *torre*, to take; *tolgo* and *toglio*, *tolsi*, *tolto*.

Scegliere, to choose, makes no contraction in the Infinitive Mood, but is irregular like the rest: I shall therefore conjugate *cogliere*, as an Example for all others of the same termination.

Indicative Present.

Sing. *Io colgo*, I gather.

Tu cogli, thou gatherest.

Egli coglie, he gathers.

Plur. *Noi cogliamo*, we gather.

Voi cogliete, ye gather.

Eglino colgono or *cogliono*, they gather.

Imperfect. *Io coglievo*, &c. I gathered, &c.

Definite.

Definite.

Sing. *Io colsi*, I gathered.

Tu cogliesti, thou gatheredst.

Egli colse, he gathered.

Plur. *Noi cogliemmo*, we gathered.

Voi coglieste, ye gathered.

Eglino colsero, they gathered.

Future.

Sing. *Io corrò*, I shall gather.

Tu corrai, thou shalt gather.

Egli corrà, he shall gather.

Plur. *Noi correremo*, we shall gather.

Voi correte, ye shall gather.

Eglino corranno, they shall gather.

Imperative.

Sing. *Cogli*, gather thou.

Colga or *coglia*, let him gather.

Plur. *Cogliamo*, let us gather.

Cogliete, gather ye.

Colgano or *cogliano*, let them gather.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io colga* or *coglia*, that I may gather.

Che tu colga, that thou mayst gather.

Che egli colga, that he may gather.

Plur. *Che noi cogliamo*, that we may gather.

Che voi cogliate, that ye may gather.

Che eglino colgano or *cogliano*, that they may gather.

First Imperf. *Se io coglieffi*, &c. if I gathered, &c.

*Second Imperfect.*Sing. *Io correi*, I should gather.*Tu corresti*, thou shouldst gather.*Egli correbbe*, he should gather.Plur. *Noi correremmo*, we should gather.*Voi correste*, ye should gather.*Eglino correbbero*, they should gather.Infinitive. *Cogliere* or *corre*, to gather.Gerund. *Cogliendo*, gathering.Participle. *Colto*, gathered.*Of Verbs in here.*

TRAHERE, by contraction *trarre*, with its Compounds, being the only Verbs that have their termination in *here*, in the Definitive makes *ssi*, and in the Participle *tto*. But you must take notice, that modern Authors write *trarre* or *traere*, without *b*.

Indic. Pres. *Trao* or *traggo*, *trai*, *trae*, *trajamo*, *traete*, *traono* or *traggono*, I draw, &c.

Imperfect. *Traevo*, *traevi*, &c. I did draw, &c.

Definite. *Trassi*, *traesti*, *trasse*, *traemmo*, *traeste*, *trassero*, I drew.

Future. *Trarrò*, *trarrai*, &c. I shall draw, &c.

Imperative. *Trai*, *tragga*, *trajamo*, *traete*, *traggano*, draw thou, &c.

Conj. Pres. *Che io tragga*, *che tu tragga*, *che egli tragga*, *che noi trajamo*, *che voi trajate*, *che eglino traggano*, that I draw, &c.

First

First Imperf. *Se traessi, traessi, traesse, &c.* if I should draw, &c.

Second Imp. *Trarrei, trarresti, trarrebbe, trarremmo, trarreste, trarrebbero, I* should draw, &c.

Infinitive. *Trarre*, to draw.

Gerund. *Traendo*, drawing.

Participle. *Tratto*, drawn.

Of Verbs in lere.

SVELLERE, to pluck; with its Compounds, are the only Verbs in *lere*, and make *si* in the Definite, and *to* in the Participle.

Present, *svello*; Definite, *svelli*; Participle, *svolto*.

Of Verbs in mere.

PREMERE, to press; *sumere*, to take; and their Compounds, are the only Irregular Verbs of this termination.

Premo, pressi or *premei, premuto*.

Its Compounds in *imere*, make the Definite *ssi*, and the Participle *sso*, as,

Opprimere, to oppress; *opprimo, oppressi, oppresso*.

Imprimere, to print; *imprimo, impressi, inpresso*.

Sumere, is not in use, its Compounds make *sunsi, sunto*.

Assumere, to assume; *assumo, assunsi, assunto*.

Risumere, to resume; *risumo, risunsi, risunto*.

Of Verbs in *nere*.

PONERE or *porre*, to put, with its Compounds, are the only Verbs that change *nere* into *si* for the Definite, and into *sto* for the Participle, and make a contraction in the Infinitive Mood; as *pongo*, *posi*, *posto*; *proponere* or *proporre*, to propose, *propongo*, *proposi*, *proposto*, &c.

Note, That the Verbs whose termination are in *nere*, take *g* where the letters *o* or *a* would follow the *n*, that is to say, in all the Present Tenses; and change the *ne* into *r* in the Future and Second Imperfect.

Present. *Pongo*, *poni*, *pone*, *poniamo*, *ponete*, *pongono*, I put, &c.

Imperfect. *Ponevo*, &c. I did put, &c.

Definite. *Posi*, *ponesti*, *pose*, *ponemmo*, *poneste*, *posero*, I did put or place, &c.

Future. *Porro*, *porrai*, *porrà*, &c. I shall put, &c.

Imperat. *Poni*, *ponga*, *poniamo*, *ponete*, *pongano*, put thou, &c.

Conj. Pres. *Che ponga*, *a, a*, *poniamo*, *poniate*, *pongano*, that I put, &c.

First Imp. *Se ponessi*, *ponessi*, *ponesse*, &c. if I should put, &c.

Second Im. *Porrei*, *porresti*, *porrebbe*, &c. I should put, &c.

Infinitive. *Ponere* or *porre*, to put or place.

Gerund. *Ponendo*, putting or placing.

Participle. *Posso*, put or placed.

Of Verbs in *ndere*.

CHANGE *ndere* into *si*, you will form the Definite Tense; and as for the Participles, some change *ndere* into *sto*, some into *uso*, some into *oso*, and some into *eso*.

Rispondere, to answer; *rispondo*, *risposi*, *risposto*.

Nascondere, to hide; *nascondo*, *nascosi*, *nascosto*.

Confondere, to confound; *confondo*, *confusi*, *confuso*.

Fondere, to melt; *fondo*, *fusi*, *fuso*.

Tondere, to shear; *tondo*, *tosì*, *tosò*.

Verbs in *ndere* make the Participle in *eso*.

Apprendere, to learn; *apprendo*, *appresi*, *appreso*.

Attendere, to attend; *attendo*, *attesi*, *atteso*.

Comprendere, to comprehend; *comprendo*, *compresi*, *compreso*.

Prendere, to take; *prendo*, *presi*, *preso*.

Rendere, to render; *rendo*, *resi*, *reso*.

Fendere, to cleave; and *pendere*, to hang down; are Regular (as you have already observed in page 169.) but the Compounds of these two Verbs are Irregular, and make *esi* in the Definite, and *eso* in the Participle; as *difendere*, to defend; *difendo*, *difesi*, *difeso*; *appendere*, to hang up or on; *appendo*, *appesi*, *appeso*.

Of Verbs in *pere*.

ROMPERE, to break; with its Compounds, are the only Verbs in this termination, and change *ompere* into *uppi* for the Definite, and into *otto* for the Participle.

Present. *Rompo*, *rompi*, *rompe*, *rompiamo*, *rompete*,
rompono, I break, &c.

Imperfect. *Rompevo*, *rompevi*, &c. I did break, &c.

Definite.

Definite. *Ruppi, rompesti, ruppe, rompemmo, rompesti, ruppero, I broke.*

Future. *Romperò, romperai, &c. I shall break, &c.*

Imperat. *Rompi, rompa, rompiamo, rompete, rompano, break thou, &c.*

Conj. Pres. *Rompa, a, a, rompiamo, rompiate, rompano, that I break, &c.*

First Imp. *Se rompesti, rompesti, rompesti, &c. if I should break, &c.*

Second Im. *Romperei, romperesti, I should break, &c.*

Infinitive. *Rompere, to break.*

Gerund. *Rompendo, breaking.*

Participle. *Rotto, broken.*

Of Verbs in rere.

ONLY *correre*, and its Compounds, are terminated in *rere*; and make *si* in the Definitive, and *so* in the Participle.

Correre, to run; *corro, corsi, corso.*

Concorrere, to concur; *concorro, concorsi, concorso.*

Discorrere, to discourse; *discorro, discorsi, discorso, &c.*

Of Verbs in tere.

THESE Verbs make *ssi* in the Definite, and *so* in the Participle.

Rislettere, to reflect; *rifletto, riflessi, riflesso.*

Riscuotere, to receive; *riscuoto, riscossi, riscosso.*

Scuotere, to shake; *scuoto, scossi, scosso.*

Percuotere, to strike; *percuoto, percosi, percosso.*

Mettere, to put; in the Definite, makes, *misi, mettesti, mise, mettemmo, metteste, misero*; Participle *messo*. *Promettere*, to promise; *prometto, promisi,*

promisi, promesso. We sometimes find *misero* and *promessero*, for *miserò* and *promiserò*; but this is oftener in verse than prose.

Assistere, to assist; in its Preter Definite, makes *assistii, assististi, assistì, assistimmo, assististeste, assististete*, and *assistito* in the Participle.

Of Verbs in *vere*.

THE Definite Tense of these Verbs is formed by changing *vere* into *ssi* or *si*, the Participle has different terminations.

Affolvere, to absolve; *assolvo, assolsi* or *assolvi, assoluto*.

Risolvere, to resolve; *risolvo, risolvi* or *risolvi, risoluto*.

Muovere, to move; *muovo, muovi, mosso*.

Rimovere, to remove; *rimovo, rimovi, rimosso*.

Scrivere, to write; *scrivo, scrissi, scritto*.

Vivere, to live; *vivo, vissi, vissuto*.

Note, That the First Person Singular of the Conjunctive Present of all the Verbs in *ere* and *ire*, is formed of the First Person Singular of the Indicative Mood, changing *o* into *a*; as *vedere, vedo, veda*; *scrivere, scrivo, scriva*; *rendere, rendo, renda*; *dormire, dormo, dorma*; *sentire, sento, senta*; *finire, finisco, finisca*; except the Verbs *essere, sono, sia*; *sapere, so, sappia*; *avere, ho, abbia*; *dovere, devo, debba*.

Of Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

THERE are but two Verbs of this Conjugation that are more Irregular than the others; viz. *dire*, to say; and *venire*, to come.

Six of those which have been reckoned among the Regular Verbs, as in page 170, may also be reckoned among the Irregular ones; viz. *aprire*, to open; *coprire*, to cover; *morire*, to die; *salire*, to go up; *udire*, to hear; and *uscire*, to go out; because some of them, besides having their regular termination in all the Tenses like the Verb *dormire*, may in some Tenses have a different termination, as well as some differ in the Participle, and others vary tho' very little in some Persons of the Present Tense; for which reasons all together may be called Irregular; but the rest of the Irregular Verbs of this Conjugation are easier to be learnt, being all conjugated alike, and are included under one rule, as you may observe after the following Conjugation of the above eight Verbs.

Aprire is Irregular in the Definite, where, besides *aprii*, it makes also *apersi*; and in the Participle, *aperto*.

Indic. Pr. *Apro, apri, apre, apriamo, aprite, aprono,*
I open, &c.

Imperfect. *Aprivo, aprivi, &c.* I did open, &c.

Definite. *Aprii and apersi, apristi, aprì and aperse,*
aprimmo, apriste, aprirono and apersero,
I opened, &c.

Future. *Aprirò, aprirai, &c.* I shall open, &c.

Imperat. *Apri, apra, apriamo, aprite, aprano,* open
thou, &c.

Conj. Pres. *Che apra, a, a, apriamo, apriate, aprano,*
that I open, &c.

First

First Imp. *Se aprissi, aprissi, aprisse, &c.* if I should open, &c.

Second Im. *Aprirei, apriresti, aprirebbe, &c.* I should open, &c.

Infinitive. *Aprire, to open.*

Gerund. *Apriendo, opening.*

Participle. *Aperto, opened.*

Coprire, to cover; is Irregular like aprire, and makes coprii and copersi; and in the Participle, coperto.

Ind. Pres. *Copro, copri, copre, copriamo, coprite, coprono, I cover, &c.*

Imperf. *Coprivo, coprivi, &c.* I did cover, &c.

Definite. *Coprii and copersi, copristi, copri and coperse, coprimmo, copriste, coprirono and copersero, I did cover, &c.*

Future. *Coprirò, coprirai, &c.* I shall cover, &c.

Imperat. *Copri, copra, copriamo, coprite, coprano, cover thou, &c.*

Conj. Pr. *Che copra, a, a, copriamo, copriate, coprano, that I cover, &c.*

First Imp. *Se coprissi, coprissi, coprissi, if I should cover, &c.*

Second Im. *Coprirei, copriresti, &c.* I should cover, &c.

Infinitive. *Coprire, to cover.*

Gerund. *Coprendo, covering.*

Particip. *Coperto, covered.*

Dire, to say; is irregular in the Definite and Participle.

Ind. Pres. *Dico, dici, dice, diciamo, dite, dicono, I say, &c.*

Imper-

Imperfect.	<i>Diceva, dicevi, &c.</i> I did say, &c.
Definite.	<i>Disse, dicesti, disse, dicemmo, diceste, dissero, I said, &c.</i>
Future.	<i>Dirò, dirai, &c.</i> I shall say, &c.
Imperative.	<i>Dici, dica, diciamo, dite, dicano, say thou, &c.</i>
Conj. Pres.	<i>Dica, a, o, diciamo, diciate, dicano, that I say, &c.</i>
First Imperf.	<i>Se dicessi, dicessi, dicessi, &c.</i> if I should say.
Second Imp.	<i>Direi, diresti, direbbe, &c.</i> I should say, &c.
Infinitive.	<i>Dire, to say.</i>
Gerund.	<i>Dicendo, saying.</i>
Participle.	<i>Detto, said.</i>

Morire, to die ;

Is no otherwise irregular than as it has two Terminations in some Persons of the Tenses, and in the Participle makes *morto*.

Indic. Pres.	<i>Moro or muojo, mori, more, moriamo, or moriamo, morite, morono or muojono, &c.</i> I die, &c.
Imperfect.	<i>Morivo, morivi, &c.</i> I did die, &c.
Definite.	<i>Morii, moristi, morì, morimmo, moriste, morirono, I died, &c.</i>
Future.	<i>Morirò or morrò, morirai or morrai, &c.</i> I shall die, &c.
Imperative.	<i>Mori, mora or moja, moriamo or muojamo, morite, morano or muojano, die thou, &c.</i>

Conj.

Conj. Pres. *Che io mora* or *moja*, *a, a, moriamo* or *muojama*, *moriata*, *morano* or *muojana*, that I die.

First Imperf. *Se morissi*, *morissi*, *morisse*, &c. I should die, &c.

Second Imp. *Morirei* or *morrei*, *moriresti* or *moresti*, I should die, &c.

Infinitive. *Morire*, to die.

Gerund. *Morendo*, dying.

Participle. *Morto*, dead.

Salire, to go up;

Is irregular like *morire*, having also two Terminations in some Persons of the Tenses, but its Participle is Regular.

Indic. Pres. *Salgo* and *salgo*, *sali*, *sale*, *sagliamo*, *salite*, *salgono* and *sagliano*, I go up, &c.

Imperfect. *Salivo*, *salivi*, &c. I did go up, &c.

Definite. *Salii*, *salisti*, *sali*, *salimmo*, *saliste*, *salirono*, I went up, &c.

Future. *Salirà*, *salirai*, &c. I shall go up, &c.

Imperative. *Sali*, *salga* or *saglia*, *sagliamo*, *salite*, *salgano*, or *sagliano*, go up, &c.

Conj. Pres. *Che salga* or *saglia*, *a, a, sagliamo*, *sagliate*, *salgano* or *sagliano*, that I go up, &c.

First Imperf. *Se salissi*, *salissi*, *salisse*, &c. if I should go up, &c.

Second Imp. *Salirei*, *saliresti*, &c. I should go up, &c.

Infinitive. *Salire*, to go up.

Gerund. *Salendo*, going up.

Participle. *Salito*, gone up.

Udire,

Udire, to hear ;

Is irregular only in the Present Tenses, changing *u* into *o* in the First, Second, and Third Persons Singular, and Third Plural.

Indic. Pres. *Odo, odi, ode, udiamo, udite, odono*, I hear, &c.

Imperfect. *Udivo, udivi*, &c. I did hear, &c.

Definite. *Udii, udisti, udì, udimmo, udiste, udirono*, I heard, &c.

Future. *Udirò, udirai*, &c. I shall hear, &c.

Imperative. *Odi, oda, udiamo, udite, odano*, hear thou, &c.

Conj. Pres. *Che oda, a, a, udiamo, udiate, odano*, that I hear, &c.

First Imp. *Se udisti, udisti, udiste*, &c. if I heard, &c.

Second Imp. *Udirei, udiresti*, &c. I should hear, &c.

Infinitive. *Udire*, to hear.

Gerund. *Udendo*, hearing.

Participle. *Udito*, heard.

Venire, to come.

This Verb is Irregular in the Definite and Participle.

Indic. Pres. *Vengo, vieni, viene, veniamo, venite, vengono*, I come, &c.

Imperfect. *Venivo, venivi*, &c. I did come.

Definite. *Venni, venisti, venne, venimmo, veniste, vennero*, I came, &c.

Future. *Verrò, verrai, verrà, verremo, verrete, verranno*, I shall come, &c.

Impe-

Imperative. *Vieni, venga, veniamo, venite, vengano, come thou, &c.*

Conj. Pres. *Che venga, a, a, veniamo, veniate, vengano, that I come, &c.*

First Imperf. *Se venissi, venissi, venisse, &c. if I should come, &c.*

Second Imp. *Io verrei, tu verresti, &c. I should come, &c.*

Infinitive. *Venire, to come.*

Gerund. *Venendo, coming.*

Participle. *Venuto, come.*

“ Take notice that the turn of the Phrase has more grace and beauty in it when we use the Tenses of the Verbs *venire*, instead of those of the Verb *essere*, before Participles. Examples, *vien riputato*, for *è riputato*, he is reputed; *verrà lodata*, for *sarà lodata*, she shall be praised; *verranno biasimati*, for *saranno biasimati*, they shall be blamed.

Uscire, to go out;

Is only irregular in the Present Tense, changing *u* into *e*, in the First, Second, and Third Persons Singular, and Third Plural.

Indic. Pres. *Espo, esci, esce, usciamo, uscite, escano, I go out, &c.*

Imperfect. *Uscivo, uscivi, &c. I did go out, &c.*

Definite. *Uscii, uscisti, uscì, uscimmo, usciste, uscirono, I went out, &c.*

- Future. *Uscirò, uscirai, &c.* I shall go out, &c.
- Imperative. *Esci, esca, usciamo, uscite, escano,* go out, &c.
- Conjunctive. *Che esca, a, a, usciamo, usciate, escano,* that I go out, &c.
- First Imperf. *Se uscissi, uscissi, uscisse, &c.* If I should go out, &c.
- Sec. Impref. *Uscirei, usciresti, &c.* I should go out, &c.
- Infinitive. *Uscire,* to go out.
- Gerund. *Uscendo,* going out.
- Participle. *Uscito,* gone out.

Of Verbs which make isco in the Present Tense.

BESIDES the foregoing eight Verbs, there is only another kind of Irregular Verbs, of which there are a great many in the Italian Language, and all included under one Rule, which are formed from the Termination of the Infinitive, changing *ire* into *isco* for the First Person Singular of the Indicative Mood, and are so conjugated that the Second and Third Persons Singular, and the Third Plural, follow that Termination; but the First and Second Persons Plural follow the Termination of the Regular Verbs, as *isco, isci, isce, iamo, ite, iscono*; they are also irregular in the Imperative, and in the Present of the Conjunctive, and as a model for all the rest I shall conjugate the following Verb.

Favorire, to favour.

Sing. *Favorisco*, I favour.

Favorisci, thou dost favour.

Favorisce, he doth favour.

Plur. *Favoriamo*, we do favour.

Favorite, ye do favour.

Favoriscono, they do favour.

Imperf. *Favorivo*, *favorivi*, &c. I did favour, &c.

Defin. *Favorii*, *favoristi*, *favorì*, &c. I did favour, &c.

Future. *Favorirò*, *favorirai*, &c. I shall favour, &c.

Imperative.

Sing. *Favorisci*, favour thou.

Favorisca, let him favour.

Plur. *Favoriamo*, let us favour.

Favorite, favour ye.

Favoriscano, let them favour.

Conjunctive Present.

Sing. *Che io favorisca*, that I favour.

Che tu favorisca, that thou dost favour.

Che egli favorisca, that he doth favour.

Plur. *Che noi favoriamo*, that we favour.

Che voi favoriate, that ye favour.

Che eglino favoriscano, that they favour.

First Imp. *Se io favorissi*, &c. if I did favour, &c.

Sec. Imp. *Io favorirei*, &c. I should favour, &c.

Infinitive. *Favorire*, to favour.

Gerund. *Favorendo*, favouring.

Participle. *Favorito*, favoured.

Conjugate the following Verbs after the same manner, viz.

<i>Abbolire</i> , to abolish.	<i>Fallire</i> , to fail.
<i>Abborrire</i> , to abhor.	<i>Ferire</i> , to wound.
<i>Adempire</i> , to accomplish.	<i>Finire</i> , to finish.
<i>Aderire</i> , to adhere.	<i>Fiorire</i> , to flourish.
<i>Adolcire</i> , to sweeten.	<i>Fornire</i> , to furnish.
<i>Alleggerire</i> , to lighten or disburden.	<i>Gradire</i> , to like or approve of.
<i>Ammonire</i> , to admonish.	<i>Impallidire</i> , to turn pale.
<i>Ammutire</i> , to become dumb.	<i>Impedire</i> , to hinder.
<i>Annibittire</i> , to grow indolent.	<i>Inasprire</i> , to exasperate.
<i>Ardire</i> , to dare.	<i>Incrudelire</i> , to grow cruel.
<i>Arricchire</i> , to enrich.	<i>Indebolire</i> , to grow weak.
<i>Arrossire</i> , to blush.	<i>Ingagliardire</i> , to grow stronger.
<i>Attribuire</i> , to attribute.	<i>Ingerirsi</i> , to intermeddle with.
<i>Avvertire</i> , to warn.	<i>Istruire</i> , to instruct.
<i>Avvilire</i> , to abase.	<i>Insuperbire</i> , to grow proud.
<i>Bandire</i> , to banish.	<i>Languire</i> , to languish.
<i>Bianchire</i> , to whiten.	<i>Mentire</i> , to lie.
<i>Capire</i> , to comprehend.	<i>Munire</i> , to fortify.
<i>Colpire</i> , to strike.	<i>Nutrire</i> , to nourish.
<i>Compatire</i> , to compassionate.	<i>Ordire</i> , to plot.
<i>Concepire</i> , to conceive.	<i>Partorire</i> , to lie in.
<i>Condire</i> , to season.	<i>Patire</i> , to suffer.
<i>Consequire</i> , to obtain.	<i>Percepire</i> , to perceive.
<i>Definire</i> , to define or determine.	<i>Perire</i> , to perish.
<i>Differire</i> , to defer.	<i>Preferire</i> , to prefer.
<i>Digerire</i> , to digest.	<i>Presagire</i> , to presage or foretel.
<i>Esaudire</i> , to hear.	<i>Proibire</i> , to forbid or prohibit.
<i>Esseguire</i> , to execute.	<i>Punire</i> , to punish.
	<i>Rapire</i> ,

<i>Rapire</i> , to take away.	<i>Stordire</i> , to stun or amaze.
<i>Riverire</i> , to revere.	<i>Suggestire</i> , to suggest.
<i>Sbigottire</i> , to astonish.	<i>Supplire</i> , to supply.
<i>Scolpire</i> , to engrave.	<i>Tradire</i> , to betray.
<i>Sminuire</i> , to diminish.	<i>Trasgredire</i> , to transgress.
<i>Spedire</i> , to dispatch.	<i>Ubbidire</i> , to obey.
<i>Stabilire</i> , to establish.	<i>Unire</i> , to unite. &c.

The rest you will learn by practice; but take notice of the following Rules.

Note, That some of the above Verbs in *isco* do not follow the Conjugation of the Verb *favorisco*, and differ also from the Verb *dormire* in the Preterperfect, Definite and Participle, viz.

<i>Apparire</i> ,	} to appear;	<i>apparisco</i> , <i>apparisi</i> , <i>apparso</i> .
<i>Comparire</i> ,		<i>comparisco</i> , <i>comparisi</i> , <i>comparso</i> .
<i>Offrire</i> ,	} to offer.	<i>offro</i> , <i>offrii</i> , <i>offerto</i> .
<i>Offerire</i> ,		<i>offerisco</i> , <i>offerisi</i> , <i>offerito</i> .
		or <i>offerfi</i> ,
<i>Proferire</i> , to proffer;		<i>proferisco</i> , <i>proferii</i> , <i>proferito</i> .
<i>Soffrire</i> , to suffer;	}	<i>soffro</i> , <i>soffrii</i> , <i>sofferto</i> .
		<i>soffrisco</i> , <i>sofferisi</i> , <i>sofferito</i> .
<i>Sepellire</i> , to bury;	<i>sepellisco</i> , <i>sepellii</i> ,	{ <i>sepellito</i> . or <i>sepolto</i> .

There are some Verbs in *isco*, which in Poetry make two Terminations only in the Third Person Singular, of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense, as *ferire*, the Poets say *fere* and *ferisce*; *languire*, *languet* and *languisce*; *muggire*, *muge* and *muggisce*.

There are other Verbs also that may belong either to the First or Third Conjugation, by the double Termination that they may have in the Infinitive; as,

Colorare or *colorire*, to colour.

Impazzare or *Impazzire*, to become mad.

Inacerbare or *Inacerbire*, to grow sour.

Incoraggiare or *incoraggiare*, to encourage.

Indurare or *indurire*, to harden.

Inanimare or *inanimire*, to encourage.

The Poets very often use the Verbs *ire* and *gire* instead of the Verb *andare*, to go; which are both Defectives, and conjugated thus;

Ire, to go.

Note, We find in Authors none but the Tenses following, *viz.*

Imperfect. *Iva* for *andava*, he did go; *ivano* or *ivan* for *andavano*, they did go.

Imperative. *Ite* for *andate*, go ye.

Infinitive. *Ire* or *ir* for *andare*, to go.

Participle. *Ito* for *andato*, gone.

The other Tenses are not made use of by them.

Gire, to go.

Present. *Gite* for *andate*, you go.

Imperf. *Givo*, *givi*, *giva* or *gia*, *givámo*, *giváte*, *givano*, for *andavo*, *andavi*, *andava*, *andavámo*, *andaváte*, *andavano*, I did go, &c.

Pret. Def. *Gii*, *gisti*, *gi* or *gio*; *gimmo*, *giste*, *girono*, for *andai*, *andasti*, *andò*, *andammo*, *andaste*, *andarono*, I went, &c.

Future. *Girò*, *girai*, *girà*, *giremo*, *girete*, *giranno*, for *anderò*, *anderai*, *anderà*, *anderemo*, *anderete*, *anderanno*, I shall go, &c.

Impe-

Imperative. *Gite* for *andate*, go yo u.

First Imperfect of the Conjunctive.

Se gissi, se gissi, se gisse, se gissimo, se giste, se gissero, for se andassi, se andassi, se andasse, se andassimo, se andaste, se andassero, if I should go, &c.

Infinitive. *Gire* or *gir*, for *andare*, to go.

Participle. *Gito* for *andato*, gone.

Of Verbs Impersonal.

THERE are three sorts of Impersonal Verbs in Italian.

The first are those which are absolutely Impersonal, and are conjugated only by the Third Person Singular through all Moods and Tenses, according to their respective Conjugation; viz.

Piove, it rains.

Diluvia, it rains as fast as it can pour.

Lampeggia, it lightens.

Tuona, it thunders.

Nevica, it snows.

Grandina, it hails.

Gela, it freezes.

Digela, it thaws.

Fa caldo, it is hot.

Fa freddo, it is cold; and the like: All which are conjugated as the Verb following.

E X A M P L E.

Indicative Pres. *Piove*, it rains.

Preterimperfect. *Pioveva*,

Perfect Definite. *Piovè* or *piovette*, } it did rain.

Preterperfect. *Ha piovuto*, it hath rained.

First Pluperfect. *Aveva piovuto,* } it had rained,
Second Pluperf. *Ebbe piovuto,*

Second Pluperf. *Ebbe piovuto,*

Future. *Pioverà*, it will rain.

Conjunctive Pr. *Che piova*, that it may rain.

First Imperfect. *Se piovesse*, if it should rain.

Second Imperf. *Pioverebbe*, it would rain.

Perfect. *Ck'abbia piovuto*, that it hath rained.

First Pluperf. *Se avesse piovuto*, if it had rained,

Second Pluperf. *Averebbe piovuto*, it had rained.

Future. *Avrà piovuto.*

Infinitive. *Piovere*, to rain.

Preterperfect. *Aver piovuto*, to have rained.

Gerund. *Piovendo*, raining; or,

Col
Com
In
Nel } *piovere, in or by raining.*

Con

In

Ne

piovere, in or by raining.

Participle. *Piovuto*, rained.

To the above may be added the following Verbs, which are often Impersonally used through all Tenses, but they may have both Third Persons Singular and Plural, and agree with the Number of the Noun or Pronoun spoken of ; viz.

Bisogna, it must.

Basta, it sufficeth or is enough.

Pare, it seems.

Accade,

Avviene,

Occorre,

it happens.

Non importa, { it is no matter,
it don't signify.

it don't signify.

Non bisogna, } there's no need or occasion;

Non occorre, } or, it is not necessary.

The

The second sort of Impersonal Verbs are those which are of themselves Active, but are Impersonally used in Italian by the help of the Particle *si* either before or incorporated at the end of them; as *s'ama* or *amasi*, they love; *si dice* or *dicesi*, they say; and after this manner the most part of the Active Verbs may become Impersonal, and conjugated by the Third Persons both Singular and Plural, thus:

Indic. Pres.	<i>S'ama</i> or <i>amasi</i> , <i>S'amano</i> or <i>amansi</i> ,	} they love.
Imperfect.	<i>S'amava</i> or <i>amavasi</i> , <i>S'amavano</i> or <i>amavano</i> ,	} they loved or did love.
Future,	<i>S'amerà</i> or <i>amerassi</i> , <i>S'ameranno</i> or <i>ameransi</i> ,	} they shall love.

Remarks upon this Impersonal Conjugation.

“ I. THAT such phrases may turn either actively or passively both in Italian and English, as *si loda quell' uomo che combatte per la patria*, they prize or esteem that man who fights for his country; or *è lodato quell' uomo che combatte per la patria*, that man is praised who stands up in defence of his country; *si dice così*, they say so; or *è detto così*, it is said so.

“ II. There is no Particle in English answering to the Italian *si*; all the rule I can give here concerning the use of these Verbs, when Singular and when Plural, is, that when the Noun which follows such Verbs rendered Impersonal by *si* in Italian, is of the Singular Number, the Verb must be Singular; but if the Noun be
“ Plural

“ Plural, the Verb must also be of the same Num-
 “ ber. Example, *s’osserva buona legge in Inghilterra*,
 “ they observe good law in England; *ma non*
 “ *s’osservano buoni costumi fra la plebe*, but they
 “ don’t observe good manners amongst the com-
 “ mon people.

“ Except when the Verb is followed by an Ar-
 “ ticle of the Genitive Case, and then, though
 “ the Noun be of the Plural Number, yet the
 “ Verb is to be of the Singular. Example, *si*
 “ *parla di guerre*, they talk of wars; *si discorre*
 “ *delle cose passate*, they discourse upon things
 “ past; and not *si parlano*, *si discorrono*.

“ III. When the Particle *si* is put at the end of
 “ a Verb that is a Monosyllable, or has an Accent
 “ upon the last letter, the *s* should be doubled,
 “ as *si fa* or *fassi*, they do; *si dirà* or *dirassi*, they
 “ will say, &c.

“ IV. When you would put *si* after a Third
 “ Person Plural of a Verb ending in *no*, you
 “ must take off the *o* and add *si* to it; and if it
 “ ends in *mo*, take off *no* and let one *n* remain,
 “ to which add *si*, as in the examples you have
 “ already had in the Third Person Plural of the
 “ Conjugation of such Verbs; as *s’amano* or *amanfi*,
 “ *s’ameranno* or *ameranfi*, and not *amanosi*, *amerannsi*.

The third sort of Impersonal Verbs are much
 like the Reciprocal, and may likewise have both
 the Third Person Singular and Plural, according
 to the Number of the Noun or Pronoun that fol-
 lows them, and are conjugated by these Pronouns
 Conjunctives, *mi*, *ti*, *gli* or *le*, *ci*, *vi*. As for the

Third

Third Person Plural we use the Dative Case of the Pronoun Personal, either with the Article or without it, as *loro* or *a loro*, but after the Verb; viz.

Mi dispiace, I am sorry.

Mi piace, I am glad.

M'accade,

M'avviene,

M'occorre,

} it happens to me,

Mi bisogna, it behoves me.

Mi basta, it is enough for me.

Mi pare, it seems to me. And the like, which are conjugated as follows :

Indicative Present.

Mi dispiace, I am sorry or it displeases me.

Ti dispiace, thou art sorry or it displeases thee.

Gli } *dispiace*, he } is sorry or it displeaseth him or her.
Le } she }

Ci dispiace, we are sorry or it displeases us.

Vi dispiace, ye are sorry or it displeases you.

Dispiace a loro, they are sorry or it displeases them.

In the same manner they are conjugated through all the Tenses.

How to express in Italian, there is or there are, there was or there were, &c.

TAKE notice first, That according to the foregoing rules, *ci* and *vi* have been said to be Pronouns Conjunctive, as in page 77. but also you are to remember what I said in the fifth remark on them, page 81. viz. that sometimes they are not Pronouns Conjunctive (as now will appear) and consequently have a different signification.

When

When either of them come before the Verb *essere*, to be; they are Adverbs, and signify *there* in English, and the above Verb is Impersonally used, having no other Persons but the Third Singular and Third Plural through all the Tenses (except in the Imperative) according to the Thing or Things that are there; but with this difference, that we use *ci* when we speak of the Place where we are. Example, *c'è buon fuoco in questa camera*, there is a good fire in this chamber; *ci sono molte camere in questa casa*, there are several chambers in this house. But *vi* is used when we speak of a place where we are not. Example, *v'è un gran leone nella torre*, there is a great lion in the tower; *vi sono molte antichità in Italia*, there are several antiquities in Italy.

To render it more easy, I have here put the Conjugation of the Verb *essere*, impersonally used with the Adverbs *ci* and *vi*, not only when they mark a Place, either near or distant, but also when such expressions are in a question, or negative.

Indicative Present.

Near, with *ci*.

Distant, with *vi*.

There is, *c'è* or *ci sono*.

v'è or *vi sono*.

Is there? *c'è?* or *ci sono?*

v'è? or *vi sono?*

There is not, *non c'è* or *non ci sono*.

non v'è or *non vi sono*.

non ci sono.

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

There was, *c' era* or *c' v' era* or *v' erano*.
erano.

Was there? *c' era* or *c' v' era* or *v' erano*?
erano?

There was not, *non c' era* or *non v' era* or *non v' erano*.
 or *non c' erano.*

Preterperfect Definite.

There was, *ci fu* or *ci fu- vi fu* or *vi furono*.
rono.

Was there? *ci fu* or *ci vi fu* or *vi furono*?
furono?

There was not, *non ci fu* or *non vi fu* or *non vi furono*.
 or *non ci furono.*

Preterperfect.

There has been, *c' è stato* or *v' è stato* or *vi sono stati*.
 or *ci sono stati.*

Has been there? *c' è stato* or *v' è stato* or *vi sono stati*?
 or *ci sono stati?*

There has not been, *non c' è stato* or *non v' è stato* or *non vi sono*
c' è stato or *non ci sono* *stati.*
stati.

First Preterpluperfect.

There had been, *c' era v' era stato* or *v' erano*
stato or *c' erano stati.* *stati.*

Had been there? *c' era v' era stato?* or *v' erano*
stato? or *c' erano stati.* *stati?*

There had not been, *non c' era stato* or *non v' erano*
c' era stato or *non c' erano* *stati.*
stati.

Future.

Future.

There will be, *ci sarà* or *vi sarà* or *vi saranno*.
ci saranno.

Will be there? *ci sarà* or *vi sarà?* or *vi saranno?*
ci saranno?

There will not be, *non ci non vi sarà* or *non vi sa-*
rà or *non ci saranno.* *ranno.*

In the same manner you may go on through all the Tenses.

But to express in Italian, *there is some of it*, or *there are some of them*, we must join *ne* to *ci* or *vi*, and both, according to the past rules, change the *i* into *e* thus, *cene* or *vene*, as was said under the Pronouns Conjunctive Copulative, page 81. but with this difference, that when *cene* or *vene* come before the Verb *essere*, to be, *ci* and *vi* are not Pronouns Conjunctive, but Adverbs, as I said above. Example, there is some of it, *cen' è*; there are some of them, *ce ne sono*; there was some, *ven' era*; there were some, *ven' erano*; there will be some of it, *vene sarà*; there will be some of them, *vene saranno*, &c. When such expressions are negative or in a question, follow the rule as above.

C H A P. VI.

Of Participles.

THE Participle is a Part of Speech formed from the Infinitive, which, together with the Auxiliary Verbs, forms the Compound Tenses of all Verbs both Regular and Irregular.

In

In my Remarks upon both the Auxiliary Verbs, you may remember I treated on the Participles in general, thinking that to be a proper place for Beginners, where I observed that the Participle was so called as partaking the same nature of the Adjective, changing from the Masculine into the Feminine, and from Singular into Plural, according to the difference of Gender and Number of the Nouns they agree with, to which I refer the Reader.

Termination of the Participles of the First Conjugation.

IT is already known that all Verbs whose Infinitives end in *are* make the Participles in *ato*, as *amare*, *amato*, by changing accordingly, as *amata*, *amati*, *amate*; except *fare*, which makes *fatto*, to distinguish it from *fato*, *fate* or *destiny*; as also Verbs compounded from it, as *disfatto*, from *disfare*; *rifatto*, from *rifare*.

We often find some Participles of the First Conjugation contracted thus:

<i>Accetto</i>	for	<i>accettato</i> ,	accepted.
<i>Adorno</i>		<i>adornato</i> ,	adorned.
<i>Asciutto</i>		<i>asciuttato</i> ,	dried.
<i>Avvezzo</i>		<i>avvezzato</i> ,	accustomed.
<i>Carico</i>		<i>caricato</i> ,	laded.
<i>Casso</i>		<i>cassato</i> ,	cashier'd.
<i>Desto</i>		<i>destato</i> ,	awaked.
<i>Domestico</i>		<i>domesticato</i> ,	tamed.
<i>Fermo</i>		<i>fermato</i> ,	stop'd.

Franco

<i>Franco</i>	<i>francato,</i>	freed.
<i>Gonfio</i>	<i>gonfiato,</i>	swell'd or puff'd up.
<i>Guasto</i>	<i>guastato,</i>	spoil'd.
<i>Lacero</i>	<i>lacerato,</i>	torn.
<i>Lasso</i>	<i>lassato,</i>	wearied.
<i>Macerato</i>	<i>macerato,</i>	bruised.
<i>Manifesto</i>	<i>manifestato,</i>	manifested.
<i>Mozzo</i>	<i>mozzato,</i>	crop'd or cut.
<i>Netto</i>	<i>nettato,</i>	cleansed.
<i>Pago</i>	<i>pagato,</i>	paid.
<i>Pesto</i>	<i>pestato,</i>	pounded.
<i>Privo</i>	<i>privato,</i>	deprived.
<i>Scemo</i>	<i>scemato,</i>	lessened.
<i>Sconcio</i>	<i>sconciato,</i>	disordered.
<i>Secco</i>	<i>seccato,</i>	dried.
<i>Stanco</i>	<i>stancato,</i>	} wearied.
<i>Stracco</i>	<i>straccato,</i>	
<i>Tocco</i>	<i>toccato,</i>	touched.
<i>Tronco</i>	<i>troncato,</i>	cut off.
<i>Volto</i>	<i>voltato,</i>	turned.
<i>Vuoto</i>	<i>vuotato,</i>	emptied.

And several others which you will meet with on perusal of the best Authors.

Terminations of Participles in the Second Conjugation.

ALL the Regular Verbs of the Second Conjugation change the Termination of their Infinitive *ere* into *uto* for the Participles, as *credere*, *creduto*; *godere*, *goduto*; *bevere*, *bevuto*; *ricevere*, *ricevuto*, &c.

The

The Irregular Verbs in *ere* make their Participles in *so* or *to*, as I have abundantly demonstrated in treating on them with the Termination of their Preterperfect Definites, under the article of Irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation,

Termination of Participles in the Third Conjugation.

ALL Verbs of this Conjugation change the Termination of the Infinitive *ire* into *ito* for the Participles; as *dormire, dormito; finire, finito; salire, salito; udire, udito, &c.* Except the Participles of the following Verbs, viz.

Infinitive.	Participle.
<i>Apparire, to appear;</i> which makes	<i>apparso.</i>
<i>Aprire, to open;</i>	<i>aperto.</i>
<i>Comparire, to appear;</i>	<i>comparso.</i>
<i>Coprire, to cover;</i>	<i>coperto.</i>
<i>Dire, to say;</i>	<i>detto.</i>
<i>Istruire, to instruct;</i>	<i>istrutto.</i>
<i>Morire, to die;</i>	<i>morto.</i>
<i>Offerire, to offer;</i>	<i>offerto.</i>
<i>Soffrire, to suffer;</i>	<i>sofferto.</i>
<i>Venire, to come;</i>	<i>venuto.</i>

Division of Participles.

PARTICIPLES are divided into three sorts, viz. Active, Passive, and Absolute.

The Active Participles are composed by the help of the Verb *avere*, as *ho amato, havevo amato, ho detto, hai detto; ho creduto, ho sentito, &c.*

The Passive Participles are preceded by the Verb *essere*, as *sono amato*, *sono creduto*, &c.

The Absolute Participles are like those called absolute in Latin, and are composed of the Gerunds of the two auxiliary Verbs, *having* and *being*, as *having lov'd*, *havendo amato*; *being lov'd*, *essendo amato*, &c.

But *having* and *being* often are not express'd in Italian.

EXAMPLE.

Having done that, *fatto questo*.

Having said so, *detto questo*.

The sermon being done, *finita la predica*.

Note, The Italians have a peculiar way of expressing the Adverb *after* by changing the Phrase.

EXAMPLE.

After he had done, *fatto ch'ebbe*.

After he had spoken, *parlato ch'ebbe*.

After he shall have written his Letter, *scritto ch'avrà la sua lettera*.

After they had supped, *cenato ch'ebbero*.

CH A P. VII.

Of Adverbs.

AN Adverb is a Part of Speech generally put before or after Verbs to express their different circumstances or fill up their signification.

There are some Adjectives which serve as Adverbs in our Language; as *molto*, much; *tutto*, all,

all, &c. as likewise some Adverbs that serve as Prepositions, and then they govern some of the oblique Cases, (as you will hear) as *intorno*, about; *vicino*, near, &c.

Note, That among the following Adverbs you will find some little expressions which properly cannot be called Adverbs; nevertheless are useful to Beginners.

Three things are to be considered in an Adverb, viz. *Kind*, *Figure*, and *Signification*.

Kind is either Primitive, as *forte*, strong; *male*, ill; or Derivative, as *fortemente*, strongly; *malamente*, badly.

Figure is either Simple, as *spesso*, often; *tosto*, soon; or Compound, as *molto spesso*, very soon; *tosto che*, as soon as.

Signification is in respect to Time, Place, Interrogation, Quantity, Quality, Affirmation, Negation, &c.

Adverbs of Time.

Adeſſo,

Hor,

Hora,

Adeſſ' adeſſo,

Hor bora,

In breve,

Era poco,

Erappoco,

Avanti,

Prima,

Innanzi,

Poco fa,

Poco prima,

Prima d'adeſſo, before now.

} now.

} presently.

} shortly.

} before.

} a little while ago, or a little before.

Quanto prima, very soon.

A quest' hora, at this time.

Dall' hora in qua, from that time to this.

Da poco in qua, since lately.

Da jeri in qua, since yesterday.

Doppo or *dopo*, } after.

Appresso,

Dapoi,

Dipoi,

} since.

Poichè, since that.

Gia,

Digia, } already.

Oggi, to day.

Oggidi,

Oggi al giorno, } in our days.

Stamattina,

Stamane,

} this morning.

Questo doppo pranso, this afternoon.

Stasera, this evening.

Stanotte, this night.

Feri, yesterday.

Feri mattina, yesterday morning.

Feri sera, yesterday evening.

Sulla sera, towards the evening.

Feri notte,

La notte passata, } last night.

Avantieri,

Feri l'altro, } the day before yesterday.

L'altrieri,

Domenica passata, last Sunday.

La settimana passata, last week.

Una settimana passata, a week ago.

Due settimane passate, } two weeks or a fort-

Quindici giorni passati, } night ago.

Ultimamente,

Nuovamente,

Di fresco,

} lately or newly.

- Anticamente,* } formerly.
Altre volte, }
Altre fiate, }
Dimane, } to-morrow.
Domani, }
Di buon mattino, early.
Di buonora, betimes.
Tardi, late.
Domattina, } to-morrow morning.
Dimane mattina, }
Doppo dimane, } the day after to-morrow.
Postdomani, }
D'oggi in domani, from day to day.
La settimana ventura, } next week.
or entrante, }
Da qui a poco, in a little while.
In una settimana, in a week's time.
Oggi ad otto, this day se'nnight.
Domenica ad otto, next Sunday se'nnight.
In due settimane, } in two weeks or a fort-
In quindici giorni, } night's time.
Da qui ad un' anno, in a year's time.
Pel passato, } for the time past.
Per il passato, }
Per l'avvenire, } for the time to come, or
All'avvenire, } for the future.
Da indi innanzi, }
Un giorno sì e l'altro no, every other day.
Tre volte la settimana, three times a week.
Ogni giorno, every day.
Giornalmente, daily.
Continuamente, continually.
Eternamente, eternally.
Sempre, always.
Per sempre, for ever.
Mai, never.
Spesso, often.

<i>Spessissimo,</i>	}	very often.
<i>Molto spesso,</i>		
<i>Di rado or raro,</i>	}	seldom.
<i>Rare volte,</i>		
<i>Presto,</i>	}	quickly, soon, directly.
<i>Tosto,</i>		
<i>Subito,</i>		
<i>Tosto che,</i>	}	as soon as.
<i>Subito che,</i>		
<i>Giorno e notte,</i>	}	day and night.
<i>Di giorno,</i>		
<i>Di notte,</i>	}	by night.
<i>Ancora,</i>		
<i>Allora or all'ora,</i>	}	then.
<i>Mentre,</i>		
<i>Frattanto,</i>	}	whilst or in the mean while.
<i>In tanto,</i>		
<i>Di quando in quando,</i>	}	now and then.
<i>Di tempo in tempo,</i>		
<i>Ogni qual volta,</i>	}	whenever or at any time.
<i>In tempo,</i>		
<i>Tutti' ad una volta,</i>	}	all at once.
<i>A poco a poco,</i>		
<i>A bel bello,</i>	}	little by little, gently, by degrees.
<i>Pian piano,</i>		
<i>A bell' aggio,</i>		

Adverbs of Place.

<i>Qui,</i>	}	here.
<i>Qua,</i>		
<i>Quivi,</i>		
<i>Lì,</i>	}	there.
<i>Là,</i>		
<i>Ivi.</i>		
<i>Per qui,</i>	}	this way.
<i>Per qua,</i>		
<i>Per lì</i>	}	that way.
<i>Per là,</i>		

- Sin* or *fin* *qui*, } hitherto.
Sin or *fin* *qua*, }
Da *qui*, from hence.
Da *li*, from thence.
Sin or *fino*, } until.
Fin or *fino*, }
Verso, towards.
Giu, } below.
Abbasso, }
Su, } above or upon.
Sopra, }
Sotto, under.
Vicino, near.
Lontano, far.
Da *parte*, aside.
Avanti, } before.
Innanzi, }
Dietro, behind.
Entro, } in or within.
Dentro, }
Fuori, out or without.
Dirimpetto, }
Rimpetto, } over against.
In faccia, }
A fronte, }
Fra, } between or amongst.
Tra, }
Oltre, beyond.
In qualche luogo, } somewhere or in some
In qualche parte, } place.
In qualch' altro luogo, } elsewhere or in some
In qualch' altra parte, } other place.
altrove or *altronde*, }
In nissun luogo, } no where or in no place.
In nissuna parte, }
In qualunque luogo, } in whatever place.
or parte, }

Da per tutto,
In ogni luogo } every where.
or parte,

Adverbs of Interrogation.

Quando? when?
Dove? } where?
Ove? }
Donde? from whence?
Sin or fin dove? how far?
In che luogo? in what place?
Quanto? how much?
Quanti? } how many?
Quante? }
Quante volte? how many times?
Quanto tempo? how long ago?
In quanto tempo? in how long?
Quando? when?
Perche? why?
Che? what?
Come? how?
Perche cosi? why so?
Perche no? why not?
In che modo? } in what manner?
In che maniera? }
Per che causa? what for?
Per qual ragione? for what reason?
A qual effetto? &c. to what purpose? &c.

Adverbs of Number and Quantity.

Una volta, } once.
or fiata, }
Due volte, twice.
Tre volte, thrice or three times.
Quattro volte, &c. four times, &c.

<i>Di nuovo,</i>		
<i>Un' altra volta,</i>	}	again or once more.
<i>Ancóra,</i>		
<i>Qualche volta,</i>	}	sometimes.
<i>Qualche fiata,</i>		
<i>Alcune volte,</i>		
<i>Alcune fiata,</i>		
<i>Spesse volte,</i>	}	oftentimes.
<i>or fiata,</i>		
<i>Tante volte,</i>	}	several times or many times.
<i>Molte volte,</i>		
<i>Più volte,</i>		
<i>Spessissime volte,</i>	}	a great many times.
<i>Moltissime volte,</i>		
<i>Poco, little.</i>		
<i>Un pochettino,</i>	}	but little.
<i>Un tantino,</i>		
<i>Più,</i>	}	more.
<i>D'avantaggio,</i>		
<i>Altretanto,</i>		as much more.
<i>Molto,</i>	}	much.
<i>Affai,</i>		
<i>Meno, less.</i>		
<i>Troppo, too much.</i>		
<i>Molti,</i>	}	many.
<i>Molte,</i>		
<i>Abbastanza, enough,</i>		
<i>Alpiù, at most.</i>		
<i>Almeno, at least.</i>		
<i>Intieramente,</i>	}	intirely or wholly.
<i>Affatto,</i>		
<i>Niente, nothing, &c.</i>		

Adverbs of Quality

Saviamente, wisely.

Prudentemente, prudently.

Felice-

- Facciamente*, happily.
Arditamente, boldly.
Ragionevolmente, reasonably.
Freddamente, coldly.
Caldamente, hotly.
Docilmente, softly.
Insolentemente, insolently.
Imprudenteramente, imprudently.
Prontamente, readily.
Aggiatamente, at ease.
Apertamente, openly.
Temerariamente, rashly.
Inconsideratamente, heedlessly.
Negligentemente, carelessly.
Sciocamente, foolishly.
Cordealmente, heartily.
Secretamente, secretly.
In ginocchione, kneeling.
In piedi, standing.
In dietro, backward.
Da vero, in earnest.
In burla, } in jest, for pastime.
Per passa tempo, }
Apposta, on purpose.
In un subito, on a sudden.
All'improvviso, } unawares.
Improvvisamente, }
In fretta, in haste.
Alla Francese, according to the French fashion.
All' Inglese, according to the English fashion.
All' Italiana, according to the Italian fashion.
Alla Spagnuola, according to the Spanish fashion.

Adverbs of Affirmation.

- Sì*, yes.
Eccellenza sì, } yes my Lord or Lady.
Illustrissima sì, }

Si Signore, } yes Sir.
Signor si, }
Si Signora, } yes Madam or Miss.
Signora si, }
Così è, so it is.
Certo, } certainly or to be sure.
Per certo, }
Certamente, }
Sicuro, } assuredly,
Sicuramente, }
Indubitamente, undoubtedly.
Infallibilmente, infallibly.

The following is an Affirmative expression commonly used both in Italian and English.

Quello, } that
Questo, } *va bene,* } this } it will do.
Così, } so or thus }

Adverbs of Negation.

No, non, no, not.
Eccellenza no, } no my Lord or Lady.
Illustrissima no, }
Non Signore, } no Sir.
Signor no, }
Non Signora, } no Madam or Miss.
Signora no, }
Senza 'l mio consenso, without my consent.
Niente affatto, not at all.
In conto Alcuno, by no means.

The following is a Negative expression.

Quello, } that
Questo, } *non va bene,* } this } it will not
Così, } so or thus } do.

Adverbs of Order.

Primieramente or } firstly or in the first place.
in primo luogo, }
Secondariamente or } secondly or, &c.
in secondo luogo, }

In

In terzo luogo, thirdly or, &c.

In quarto luogo, fourthly, &c.

Prima d'ogni cosa, first of all.

Sopra tutto, above all.

Doppo, after.

Un doppo l'altro, one after another.

Un alla volta, one at a time.

In fila, } in a row.

Alla fila, } in a row.

In giro, round or turning about.

Ogn'un la sua volta, by turns, &c.

Adverbs of Doubt.

Forse, } perhaps or may be.

Forsebbè, } perhaps or may be.

Per accidente, } by chance, accidentally,

Per sorte, } by chance, accidentally,

Per avventura, } casually.

A caso, } casually.

Puol essere, } may be.

Puo essere, } may be.

Adverbs of Choice.

Piuttosto, } rather or sooner.

Piupresto, } rather or sooner.

Meglio, better.

Anzi, rather or sooner.

Adverbs of Comparison.

Come, } as or like.

Siccome, } as or like.

Giusto come, just as.

Così, so or thus.

A guisa, } like.

Al pari, } like.

Eguualmente come, equally as.

Adverbs

Adverbs of Demonstration.

Ecco, here is, there is, or behold.
Eccolo qui, here he is or here it is.
Eccolo là, there he is or there it is.
Eccoli qui, here they are.
Eccoli là, there they are.
Eccola qui, here she is or here it is.
Eccola là, there she is or there it is.
Eccole qui, here they are.
Eccole là, there they are.

Adverbs of Restriction or Exception.

Solamente,
Solo,
Solo che,
Eccetto,
Se non che,
Fuori,
Fuorchè,
Salvo,

only, except, but,

Adverbs of Aggregation.

Assieme,
Insieme,
Ambo,
Ambidue,
Ambedue,
Unitamente,
Cancordemente,

} together.

} both.

} jointly.

Adverbs of Difficulty.

Appena,
A malapena,
Scarsamente,
A contro voglia,
Mal volentieri,
Di mala voglia,

} hardly or scarcely.

} against one's will.

There

There are other Adverbs in our language as well as in English, which you will learn in time and with practice.

C H A P. VIII.

Of Prepositions.

A PREPOSITION is a Part of Speech commonly set before Articles, Nouns, Pronouns, and Verbs.

Except the Preposition *con*, with, which following the Latin analogy, though abridged in Italian, may be incorporated at the end of *me*, *te*, and *se*; as *con me* or *meco*, with me; *con te* or *teco*, with thee; *con se* or *feco*, with him or her; not after *noi* and *voi*, as the ancients used, saying *nosco* and *vosco*, who likewise took them from the Latin *nobiscum* and *vobiscum*.

There is no less contradiction than confusion among Italian Grammarians in their pointing out abundance of Prepositions; but to avoid all which take notice, that the three Articles *di*, *a*, *da*, as well as some of the Adverbs, often are Prepositions in Italian.

Prepositions are divided into Separable and Inseparable. The Inseparable Prepositions are never found alone, but are incorporated at the beginning of a simple word, and by themselves have no signification, as *ri*, *mis*, *fos*, *to*, *tras*, *pes*, &c.

Moreover

Moreover some of these Inseparable Prepositions have the force of increasing, diminishing, or changing the signification of the words they are incorporated with, as will evidently appear in the following table.

Inseparable Prepositions.	Simple Words.	Compound Words.
<i>Ante-</i>	<i>Porre</i> , to put ;	<i>Anteporre</i> , to prefer.
<i>Arci-</i>	<i>Duca</i> , a Duke ;	<i>Arciduca</i> , an Archduke.
<i>De-</i>	<i>Capitare</i> , to arrive or receive ;	<i>Decapitare</i> , to behead.
<i>Di-</i>	<i>Pendere</i> , to hang down ;	<i>Dipendere</i> , to depend.
<i>Dis-</i>	<i>Ferire</i> , to wound ;	<i>Differire</i> , to defer.
<i>Dis-</i>	<i>Fare</i> , to make or do ;	<i>Disfare</i> , to undo.
<i>Em-</i>	<i>Pio</i> , religious or pious ;	<i>Empio</i> , wicked.
<i>Es-</i>	<i>Porre</i> , to put ;	<i>Esporre</i> , to expose.
<i>Im-</i>	<i>Pudico</i> , chaste ;	<i>Impudico</i> , lascivious.
<i>Inter-</i>	<i>Porre</i> , to put ;	<i>Interporre</i> , to interpose.
<i>Intro-</i>	<i>Mettere</i> , to put ;	<i>Intramettere</i> , to meddle with.
<i>Mis-</i>	<i>Fatto</i> , done, or a deed ;	<i>Misfatto</i> , a crime or misdeed.
<i>Pos-</i>	<i>Porre</i> , to put ;	<i>Postporre</i> , to postpone.
<i>Pre-</i>	<i>Dire</i> , to say or tell.	<i>Prendere</i> , to forestal.
<i>Pro-</i>	<i>Mettere</i> , to put ;	<i>Promettere</i> , to promise.
<i>Rac-</i>	<i>Corre</i> , he runs ;	<i>Raccorre</i> , to gather.
<i>Re-</i>	<i>Spirare</i> , to expire ;	<i>Respirare</i> , to breathe.
<i>Ri-</i>	<i>Prendere</i> , to take ;	<i>Riprendere</i> , to rebuke.
<i>Sor-</i>	<i>Ridere</i> , to laugh ;	<i>Sorridere</i> , to smile.
<i>Sos-</i>	<i>Tenere</i> , to hold ;	<i>Softener</i> , to support.
<i>Tras-</i>	<i>Portare</i> , to carry or bring ;	<i>Trasportare</i> , to transport.
<i>Trat-</i>	<i>Tenere</i> , to hold ;	<i>Trattenere</i> , to keep.

The Separable Prepositions are those which have their signification in themselves and always govern some of the oblique cases.

EXAMPLE.

Prepositions which govern only the Accusative Case.

Con, with.

Eccetto, except.

Secondo, according.

Senza, without.

Fra or *infra*, } between or among.
Tra or *intra*, }

Incirca,

Incirca, about.

Concernente, concerning.

Come, like.

Verso, towards, &c.

Prepositions that govern both the Accusative and Genitive Cases.

Contro, } against.

Contra, }

Doppo, after.

Dietro, behind.

Entro, } in or within.

Dentro, }

Fuor, } out or without, &c.

Fuori, }

Prepositions that govern the Genitive Case only.

Al di dentro del, &c. inwards of.

Al di fuori del, &c. outwards of.

A guisa, like or in like manner of, &c.

Prepositions governing only the Dative Case.

Sin or fino, } until.

Fin or fino, }

Dirimpetto, } over against, &c.

Rimpetto, }

Prepositions governing the Genitive, Dative, and Accusative Cases.

Appresso, after.

Vicino, } near.

Presso, }

Oltre, beyond, besides, &c.

Prepo-

*Prepositions governing the Genitive and Ablative
Cases.*

Di là, del or dal, on that side of.

Di qua, del or dal, on this side of.

Lontano, } far from, &c.
Lungi, }

CH A P. IX.

Of Interjections.

THE Interjection is a Part of Speech serving to express the sudden Motions and Transports of the Soul.

They are of several Sorts, viz.

Of Joy.

Ab! ab! ab! ah! ah! ah!

Su, su, come, come.

Ob ch'allegrezza! Oh what joy!

Of Grief.

Ab! abi! ah!

Oime!

Aime!

Lasso me!

} Alas!

Misero me! Poor wretch that I am!

Ob Dio! O God!

Of Aversion.

Oibo, O fie, fough.

Eb via, away with it.

Of Encouraging.

Animo, su, cheer up.
Corraggio, take courage.
Su presto, } come on.
Su via, }

Of Warning.

Guardatevi, }
State all'erta, } have a care.
State in cervello, }

Of Silence.

Zit, zitto, whist, hush.
Silenzio, silence.
Tacete, peace there.

Of Approbation.

Bravo, brave or exceeding well.
Ben bene, } well well.
Buon buono, }

C H A P. X.

Of Conjunctions.

THE Conjunction is a Part of Speech serving to connect or join all parts of a discourse.

They are divided into Copulatives, Disjunctives, Conditionals, Illatives, Causals, Continuatives, Adversatives, and Conclusives; *viz.*

Conjunction Copulatives.

e,
ed, } and.

Anco,
Anche,
Ancóra,
Eziandio, } also.

Et, is an obsolete Conjunction.

When the Word that follows the Conjunction *and* in English, begins with a Consonant in Italian, we use *e*, when with a Vowel we use *ed*. Example, *questo, e quello*, this and that; *Pietro ed Antonio*, Peter and Antony.

Disjunctives.

O,
Od,
Opure,
Overo, } or, either.

Nè, nor neither.

Nè tampoco, neither.

We make use of *od*, before a Word beginning with a Vowel, the same as I said of the Conjunction *ed*.

Conditionals.

Se, if.

Se mai, if ever.

Con patto, on condition.

Purchè, provided that.

A meno chè, unless that.

Eccettachè, except that.

Illatives.

Dunque, } then.
Adunque, }

Perciò, }
Onde, } therefore.
Laonde, }
Per la qual cosa, }

Causals.

Peichè, for.

Perchè, because.

Affinchè, to the end that.

Continuatives.

Poichè, } since.
Posciachè, }

Del resto, as for the rest.

In maniera che, } so as, in like manner.
In guisa che, }

Adversatives.

Ma, but.

Benchè, though, although.

Conclusives.

Dunque, therefore, then.

Disortechè, } so that.
Di manierachè, }

Però, } therefore, however, but, yet.
Perciò, }
Pertanto, }

Laonde, }
In somma, } in fine or finally.
Per fine, }

A N

ITALIAN and ENGLISH VOCABULARY;

Containing all the Words most essential and commonly used in the Italian Language.

Del Cielo.

Of Heaven.

DIO or Iddio,
 il Padre,
 il Figlio or Figliuolo,
 lo Spirito santo,
 la Trinità,
 Gesù Cristo,
 il Crocifisso,
 il nostro Creatore,
 il nostro Redentore,
 il Santificatore,
 il Consolatore,
 la creazione,
 la resurrezzione,
 la Vergine Maria,
 la Madonna,
 uno spirito,
 un' angelo,
 un' arcangelo,
 un cherubino,
 un serafino,
 un beato,

God.
 the Father.
 the Son.
 the holy Ghost.
 the Trinity.
 Jesus Christ.
 the Crucifix.
 our Maker.
 our Redeemer.
 the Sanctifier.
 the Comforter.
 the creation.
 the resurrection.
 the Virgin Mary.
 our Lady or the Madonna.
 a spirit or ghost.
 an angel.
 an arch-angel.
 a cherub.
 a seraph.
 a blessed.

un martire,
 un profeta,
 un' evangelista,
 un' apostolo,
 il cielo,
 il paradiso,
 la gloria,
 il purgatorio,
 l' inferno,
 il diavolo,
 i dannati,

a martyr.
 a prophet.
 an evangelist.
 an apostle.
 heaven.
 paradise.
 glory.
 purgatory.
 hell.
 the devil.
 the damned.

Del mondo in generale.

Of the world in general.

Il sole,
 il raggio del sole,
 un' eclisse,
 la luna,
 la luna nuova,
 la luna piena,
 la luna crescente,
 la luna mancante,
 la congiunzione della lu-
 na,
 una stella,
 una costellazione,
 un pianeta,
 una cometa,
 il levante, l' oriente,
 il ponente, l' occidente,
 la tramontana, il norte,
 il mezzogiorno, il mezzodì,
 il fuoco,
 la fiamma,
 il calore,
 la tepidezza,
 una favilla,
 un tizzone acceso,

the sun.
 a sun-beam.
 an eclipse.
 the moon.
 the new moon.
 the full moon.
 the increase of the moon.
 the decrease of the moon.
 the conjunction of the
 moon.
 a star.
 a constellation.
 a planet.
 a comet or blazing star.
 the east.
 the west.
 the north.
 the south.
 the fire.
 the flame.
 the heat.
 the warmth.
 a spark.
 a firebrand.

<i>un tizzone spento,</i>	a brand quenched.
<i>la bragia, la brace,</i>	the burning coals,
<i>il carbone,</i>	a dead coal.
<i>le ceneri,</i>	the ashes.
<i>le ceneri accese,</i>	the embers.
<i>il fumo,</i>	the smoke.
<i>la fuliggine,</i>	the soot.
<i>un' incendio, quando una } casa o città è in fuoco, }</i>	a fire, when a house or town is on fire.
<i>l'aria,</i>	the air.
<i>una nuvola,</i>	a cloud.
<i>una nebbia,</i>	a mist.
<i>la scossa,</i>	a shower.
<i>la pioggia,</i>	the rain.
<i>l'arcobaleno,</i>	the rainbow.
<i>una gocciola,</i>	a drop.
<i>la gragnuola, la grandine,</i>	the hail.
<i>la neve,</i>	the snow.
<i>la rugiada,</i>	the dew.
<i>la guazza,</i>	a copious dew.
<i>il gelo,</i>	the frost.
<i>il ghiaccio,</i>	the ice.
<i>il tuono,</i>	the thunder.
<i>un fulmine, una saetta, } il baleno, }</i>	a thunderbolt.
<i>il lampo,</i>	the lightning.
<i>una burrasca,</i>	a storm.
<i>una tempesta,</i>	a tempest.
<i>un turbine,</i>	a whirlwind.
<i>il terremoto, il tremuoto,</i>	the earthquake.
<i>l'aura, il venticello, il } zeffiretto, }</i>	a gentle wind.
<i>il vento,</i>	the wind.
<i>l'euro, il levante,</i>	the east-wind.
<i>il favonio, il zeffiro,</i>	the west-wind.
<i>l'aquilone, il rovaio, la } tramontana, }</i>	the north-wind.
<i>l'austro, l'ostro,</i>	the south-wind.

<i>l' acqua,</i>	the water.
<i>l' oceano,</i>	the ocean.
<i>il mare,</i>	the sea.
<i>la maréa,</i>	the tide.
<i>il flusso,</i>	the flowing.
<i>il riflusso,</i>	the ebbing.
<i>un' onda,</i>	a wave.
<i>il maróso,</i>	the billow.
<i>un fiume,</i>	a river.
<i>un fiumicello,</i>	a narrow river.
<i>un ruscello, un ruscelletto,</i>	a rivulet.
<i>la corrente,</i>	the stream.
<i>il letto del fiume,</i>	the bottom of the river.
<i>un torrente,</i>	a brook, a torrent.
<i>una fontana, un sorgente,</i>	} a fountain, a spring.
<i>una fonte, un fonte,</i>	
<i>un pozzo,</i>	a well.
<i>il lido, la spiaggia,</i>	the shore.
<i>la riva, la sponda,</i>	the bank of a river.
<i>l' orlo,</i>	the brim.
<i>la palude, lo stagno,</i>	a pool or pond.
<i>un lago,</i>	a lake.
<i>la palude, il pantano,</i>	a marsh or fen.
<i>il guado, il guazzo, il vado,</i>	a ford or shallow.
<i>un dilluvio,</i>	a deluge or flood.
<i>un vortice,</i>	a whirlpool.
<i>un braccio di mare, uno stretto,</i>	an arm of the sea, a strait.
<i>un golfo.</i>	a gulf.
<i>un seno di mare,</i>	a bay.
<i>un porto,</i>	a port.
<i>la terra,</i>	the earth.
<i>un monte, una montagna,</i>	a mountain.
<i>una valle,</i>	a valley.
<i>una rocca,</i>	a rock.
<i>una balza, rupe, un precipizio.</i>	} a perpendicular in a rock or mountain, a precipice.
<i>la campagna,</i>	
<i>una pianura,</i>	a plain.

<i>un colle, una collina,</i>	a hill.
<i>l'erta, la montata, la salita,</i>	a cliff.
<i>il fango, il limo,</i>	the dirt or mud.
<i>la creta, l'argilla,</i>	the clay.
<i>la polvere,</i>	the dust.
<i>l'arena, la sabbia,</i>	the sand.
<i>la ghiaja,</i>	the gravel.
<i>una cava di ghiaja,</i>	a gravel-pit.
<i>la calcina,</i>	the lime.
<i>il gesso,</i>	the chalk.
<i>un'isola,</i>	an island.
<i>la strada, la via,</i>	the street or way.
<i>il gran camino, la gran</i>	} the highway or road.
<i>via or strada,</i>	
<i>un sentiero,</i>	a path.

Dell' Uomo, e delle parti del corpo umano. *Of Man, and the parts of the human body.*

<i>Un'uomo,</i>	a man.
<i>una donna,</i>	a woman.
<i>un ragazzo or fanciullo,</i>	a boy.
<i>una ragazza or fanciulla,</i>	a girl.
<i>un bambino, un'infante,</i>	} a child that cannot yet
<i>una bambina,</i>	
<i>una vergine,</i>	a virgin.
<i>un giovane,</i>	a young man.
<i>una giovane,</i>	a young woman.
<i>un vecchio,</i>	an old man.
<i>una vecchia,</i>	an old woman.
<i>un nano,</i>	a dwarf.
<i>un gigante.</i>	a giant.
<i>un mancino.</i>	a left-handed man.
<i>la pelle,</i>	the skin.
<i>un membro,</i>	a member or limb.
<i>il capo, la testa,</i>	the head.
<i>la fronte,</i>	the forehead.
<i>una cresta,</i>	a wrinkle.
<i>la tempia,</i>	the temple of the head.
<i>la faccia, il viso, il volto,</i>	the face.

<i>P aspetto, il sembiante,</i>	the countenance.
<i>P orecchio,</i>	the ear.
<i>il ciglio,</i>	the eye-brow.
<i>la palpebra,</i>	the eye-lid.
<i>i peli delle palpebre,</i>	the hairs of the eye-lids.
<i>P occhio,</i>	the eye.
<i>il bianco dell' occhio,</i>	the white of the eye.
<i>la pupilla,</i>	{ the light or apple of the eye.
<i>il naso,</i>	the nose.
<i>le narici,</i>	the nostrils.
<i>la punta del naso,</i>	the tip of the nose.
<i>le guancie,</i>	the cheeks.
<i>la bocca,</i>	the mouth.
<i>le mascelle,</i>	the jaws.
<i>il labbro,</i>	the lip.
<i>il gengive,</i>	the gum.
<i>un dente,</i>	a tooth.
<i>i denti dinanzi,</i>	the fore-teeth.
<i>i denti occhiali,</i>	the eye-teeth.
<i>i denti mascellari,</i>	the jaw-teeth.
<i>la fossetta,</i>	the dimple.
<i>la lingua,</i>	the tongue.
<i>il palato,</i>	the palate.
<i>P osso della mascella,</i>	the jaw-bone.
<i>il mento,</i>	the chin.
<i>il collo,</i>	the neck.
<i>la gola,</i>	the throat.
<i>il seno, il grembo,</i>	the bosom.
<i>la mammella, la poppa,</i>	{ the bubbly.
<i>la tetta,</i>	
<i>il capezzolo,</i>	the nipple.
<i>il petto,</i>	the breast.
<i>il ventre, la pancia,</i>	the belly.
<i>il bellico, l' ombelico, l' umbelico,</i>	{ the navel.
<i>P anguinaglia,</i>	the groin.
<i>il braccio,</i>	the arm.

<i>il gomito, il cubito,</i>	the elbow.
<i>l'ascella,</i>	the arm-pit.
<i>la mano,</i>	the hand.
<i>la mano dritta or destra,</i>	the right-hand.
<i>la mano manca, sinistra,</i> <i>or mancina,</i>	} the left-hand.
<i>la palma della mano,</i>	the palm of the hand.
<i>il vuoto della mano,</i>	the hollow of the hand.
<i>il pugno,</i>	the fist.
<i>il polso,</i>	the wrist.
<i>un dito,</i>	a finger.
<i>un' articolazione, la giuntura,</i>	a joint.
<i>le nocche,</i>	the knuckles.
<i>il dito grosso, il pollice,</i>	the thumb.
<i>l'indice,</i>	the fore-finger.
<i>il medio,</i>	the middle-finger.
<i>l'anulare,</i>	the fourth or ring-finger.
<i>il ditino, l'auricolare,</i>	the little-finger.
<i>la spalla,</i>	the shoulder.
<i>la schiena, il tergo,</i>	the back.
<i>i lombi,</i>	the loins.
<i>il fianco,</i>	the flank.
<i>le chiappe, le natiche,</i>	the buttocks.
<i>l'anca,</i>	the hip.
<i>la coscia,</i>	the thigh.
<i>il ginocchio,</i>	the knee.
<i>la gamba,</i>	the leg.
<i>la polpa della gamba,</i>	the calf of the leg.
<i>la nocca del piede,</i>	the ankle.
<i>il piede,</i>	the foot.
<i>la pianta del piede,</i>	the sole of the foot.
<i>il collo del piede,</i>	the instep.
<i>il calcagno,</i>	the heel.
<i>un dito del piede,</i>	a toe.
<i>il dito grosso del piede,</i>	the great-toe.
<i>la carne,</i>	the flesh.
<i>un muscolo,</i>	a muscle.
<i>il grasso,</i>	the fat.

<i>una membrana,</i>	a membrane or film.
<i>il tenerume, le cartilagine,</i>	a gristle.
<i>un nervo,</i>	a nerve.
<i>una vena,</i>	a vein.
<i>un' arteria,</i>	an artery.
<i>un' osso,</i>	a bone.
<i>la medolla, la midolla, il } midollo,</i>	the marrow.
<i>il cranio,</i>	the skull.
<i>le vertebre,</i>	the joints in the back-bone.
<i>l' osso della schiena,</i>	the back-bone.
<i>una costola or costa,</i>	a rib.
<i>l' osso della spalla,</i>	the shoulder-blade.
<i>l' osso del braccio,</i>	the arm-bone.
<i>l' osso della gamba, lo stinco,</i>	the shin-bone.
<i>il cuore, il core,</i>	the heart.
<i>i polmoni,</i>	the lungs or lights.
<i>il respiro,</i>	the breath.
<i>il fegato,</i>	the liver.
<i>la milza,</i>	the spleen.
<i>l' arnione, le reni, i reni,</i>	the reins or kidneys.
<i>il cervello,</i>	the brain.
<i>lo stomaco,</i>	the stomach.
<i>la bocca dello stomaco,</i>	the mouth of the stomach.
<i>le budella, le interiora,</i>	the bowels.
<i>la pancia, il ventre,</i>	the belly.
<i>gli umori,</i>	the humours.
<i>il sangue,</i>	the blood.
<i>la flemma,</i>	the phlegm.
<i>la bile, la collera,</i>	the choler.
<i>la malinconia,</i>	the melancholy.
<i>il latte,</i>	the milk.
<i>gli escrementi,</i>	the excrements.
<i>l' unghia,</i>	the nail.
<i>il pelo in ogni parte del } corpo,</i>	the hair on any part of
<i>i capelli,</i>	the body.
	the hairs of the head.

la chioma, la capigliatura,
la zazzera,
la barba,
il riccio,
il sudore,
il moccio,
la forfora,
la saliva, lo sputo,
una lacrima or lagrima,

a head of hair.
a man's head of hair.
the beard.
a curled lock.
the sweat.
the snout.
dandriff.
the spittle.
a tear.

Delle malattie che accadono ai corpi umani.

Of the diseases incident to human bodies.

L' infermità, la malattia, }
il male, }
il medico, il dottor di medicina or il fisico, }
la medicina, il medicamento, }
il chirurgo, il cerusico, }
uno speziale, }
il salasso, il cavar sangue, }
il dolore, il duolo, la doglia, }
la febbre, }
la terzana, }
il dolor di capo, or di testa, }
il dolor di dente, }
la tosse, }
la frenesia, }
la pazzia, l' insania, }
la dissenteria, il flusso di sangue, }
la pietra, }
il calcolo, la renella, }
la pleurisia, }
l' itterizia, }
la gotta, la podagra, }
la chiragra, }

a disease.
a physician.
the physick.
a surgeon or **chirurgeon**.
an apothecary.
blood-letting.
the pain.
the fever.
an ague.
the head-ach.
the tooth-ach.
a cough.
the frensy.
madness, insanity.
the bloody-flux.
the stone.
the gravel.
the pleurisy.
the jaundice.
the gout.
the gout in the hand.

<i>l'idropisia,</i>	the dropsy.
<i>l'etisia,</i>	the consumption.
<i>il mal caduco,</i>	the falling-sickness.
<i>il granchio,</i>	the cramp.
<i>la paralizia,</i>	the palsy.
<i>lo scorbutico,</i>	the scurvy.
<i>il contagio, la peste, la</i>	the plague.
<i>pestilenza,</i>	
<i>l'accessione, l'accesso, il</i>	a fit.
<i>parossismo,</i>	
<i>le convulsioni,</i>	the fits or convulsions.
<i>il vajolo, il morviglione,</i>	the small-pox.
<i>la rosolia,</i>	the meazels.
<i>la rogna, la scabbia,</i>	the itch.
<i>una cicatrice,</i>	a scar.
<i>la lividura, or il segno delle</i>	a wheal on the flesh after
<i>sferzate,</i>	
<i>una ferita,</i>	whipping.
<i>la percossa,</i>	a wound.
<i>il dolor di capo,</i>	the stroke.
<i>il singhiozzo,</i>	the head-ach.
<i>il rutto,</i>	the hiccup.
<i>il flato,</i>	a belch.
<i>lo svenimento,</i>	the wind.
<i>la diarrea, l'uscita di corpo,</i>	a fainting fit.
<i>la tigna,</i>	a looseness.
<i>un gonfiamento,</i>	the scurf.
<i>la vertigine, il giracapo,</i>	a bunch or swelling.
<i>la schinanzia, la squi-</i>	{ a swimming of the
<i>nanzia,</i>	
<i>la colica, il dolor colico,</i>	head, or giddiness.
<i>la scrofola,</i>	the squinancy.
<i>un'ulcera,</i>	the colic.
<i>le moroidi,</i>	the king's evil.
<i>una postema,</i>	a bile.
<i>una pustula,</i>	the piles.
<i>la lentiggine, la letiggine,</i>	an imposthume.
	a pimple.
	freckles.

<i>l'infreddatura,</i>	a cold.
<i>la raucedine,</i>	hoarseness.
<i>l'asma,</i>	the asthma.
<i>un porro,</i>	a wart, a wen.
<i>la gobba,</i>	{ a bunch or swelling on the back.
<i>lo sciroppo,</i>	syrup.
<i>un unguento,</i>	an unguent.
<i>un boccone,</i>	a bolus.
<i>una polvere,</i>	a powder.
<i>un vescicatorio,</i>	a blister.
<i>attaccar le coppe, ventose,</i>	cupping.
<i>una mignatta, una san-</i>	a leech.
<i>guisuga,</i>	
<i>sal volatile,</i>	volatile salt.
<i>una quintessenza,</i>	a quintessence.
<i>un impiastro, or cerotto,</i>	a plaister.
<i>l'ostia,</i>	the wafer.
<i>corno di cervo,</i>	hartshorn.
<i>un serviziale, uno cristero,</i>	a glister.
<i>l'unzione,</i>	ointment.
<i>un cauterio,</i>	an issue.
<i>una pillola,</i>	a pill.
<i>i semplici,</i>	medicinal herbs.
<i>il bagno,</i>	the bagnio.

De i sensi.

Of the Senses.

<i>La vista,</i>	The sight.
<i>l'udito,</i>	the hearing.
<i>l'odorato,</i>	the smelling.
<i>il gusto,</i>	the taste.
<i>il tatto,</i>	the touch or feeling.
<i>il senso commune,</i>	common sense.
<i>il lume, la luce,</i>	the light.
<i>le tenebre, l'oscurità, il bujo,</i>	the darkness.
<i>l'ombra,</i>	the shadow.
<i>un sogno,</i>	a dream.

<i>un suono,</i>	a sound.
<i>la voce,</i>	the voice.
<i>il bisbiglio, il susurro,</i>	the whispering.
<i>lo strepito, il rumore,</i>	the noise.
<i>l'odore,</i>	the smell.
<i>l'odor buono,</i>	the sweet smell.
<i>l'odor cattivo, il puzzo,</i>	the stink.
<i>il gusto, il sapore,</i>	the relish, the flavour.
<i>la fame,</i>	the hunger.
<i>la sete,</i>	the thirst.
<i>la nausea,</i>	the loathing.
<i>il caldo,</i>	the heat.
<i>il freddo,</i>	the cold.
<i>la fantasia,</i>	the fancy.
<i>la memoria,</i>	the memory.
<i>il riso,</i>	the laughter.
<i>il pianto,</i>	the weeping.
<i>un sospiro,</i>	a sigh.
<i>il canto, il cantare,</i>	the singing.
<i>la veglia, il vegliare,</i>	the watching.
<i>il sonno, il dormire,</i>	the sleep.
<i>il ronfare,</i>	the snoring.

Dell' Intelletto, della Vo-
lontà, e delle Passioni.

*Of the Understanding, the
Will, and the Passions.*

<i>La mente,</i>	The mind.
<i>l' intelletto, il conosci- mento, l' intendimen- to,</i>	the understanding.
<i>la ragione,</i>	the reason.
<i>la scienza, il sapere,</i>	the knowledge.
<i>l' ignoranza,</i>	the ignorance.
<i>il giudizio, l' avvedimento,</i>	the judgment.
<i>il consiglio, l' avviso,</i>	the counsel.
<i>l' opinione,</i>	the opinion.
<i>l' errore, lo sbaglio,</i>	the error, the mistake.
<i>la fede, la credenza,</i>	the faith or belief.

<i>la lealtà,</i>	the loyalty.
<i>la sapienza, la saviezza, il senno,</i>	the wisdom.
<i>la pazzia, la stoltizia,</i>	folly.
<i>la sciocchezza,</i>	filliness or foolishness.
<i>il sospetto,</i>	the suspicion.
<i>la gelosia,</i>	the jealousy.
<i>la volontà, la voglia, il beneplacito,</i>	the will.
<i>la libertà,</i>	the liberty.
<i>la licenza,</i>	the licence.
<i>gli affetti, le passioni,</i>	the affections or passions.
<i>il timore, la paura, la tema, or temenza,</i>	the fear.
<i>la fiducia,</i>	the trust.
<i>la vergogna, il rossore,</i>	the shame.
<i>l'ardire, l'ardimento, l'audacia, or presunzione,</i>	the boldness.
<i>l'allegrezza, la festa, la gioja,</i>	the joy.
<i>l'attristamento, la mestizia, il contristamento,</i>	the sadness.
<i>l'ira, la stizza, l'indignazione,</i>	the anger.
<i>l'umanità la benignità, la cortesia, la gentilezza,</i>	the humanity, benignity or gentleness.
<i>l'amore, l'affezione, la benevolenza,</i>	the love.
<i>l'odio, l'abborrimento,</i>	the hatred.
<i>la misericordia, la compassione, la pietà,</i>	the mercy.
<i>lo sdegno, il disdegno,</i>	the disdain or indignation.
<i>l'invidia, l'indegnaione,</i>	the envy.
<i>il gradimento, la grazia, la benevolenza,</i>	the good-will, favour.
<i>l'emulazione, la competizione, la gara,</i>	the emulation.

<i>lo spregio, lo sprezzo, il</i>	}	the scorn or contempt.
<i>dispregio,</i>		
<i>la costanza, la fermezza,</i>	}	constancy.
<i>la perseveranza,</i>		
<i>l'impazienza,</i>		impatience.
<i>la speranza, la speme,</i>		hope.
<i>la disperazione, il dispe-</i>	}	despair.
<i>ramento,</i>		
<i>il dolore, il duolo,</i>		the grief.
<i>il piacere, il diletto,</i>		the pleasure.

Delle Virtù e dei Vizi.

Of the Virtues and Vices.

<i>La virtù,</i>	Virtue.
<i>la carità,</i>	charity.
<i>la giustizia,</i>	justice.
<i>la temperanza,</i>	temperance.
<i>il valore, il coraggio,</i>	valour, courage.
<i>la prudenza,</i>	prudence.
<i>la castità, la continenza,</i>	chastity.
<i>la modestia,</i>	modesty.
<i>la vergogna,</i>	the shame or bashfulness.
<i>la civiltà, l'urbanità,</i>	the civility.
<i>l'accarezzamento,</i>	the coaxing.
<i>la verità,</i>	the truth.
<i>la sincerità, la schiettezza,</i>	the sincerity.
<i>la liberalità,</i>	the liberality.
<i>la devozione, la pietà,</i>	the godliness.
<i>l'onestà,</i>	the honesty.
<i>la concordia,</i>	the concord.
<i>l'amicizia,</i>	the friendship.
<i>la gratitudine,</i>	the thankfulness.
<i>l'industria,</i>	the industry.
<i>la diligenza,</i>	the diligence.
<i>la pazienza, la sofferenza,</i>	the patience.
<i>la pace,</i>	the peace.
<i>le maniere,</i>	the manners.

<i>il costume, la consuetudine,</i>	the custom, usage.
<i>la prosperità,</i>	the prosperity.
<i>la felicità,</i>	the happiness.
<i>il premio, il guiderdone,</i>	the reward.
<i>la limosina,</i>	the alms.
<i>un dono, un donativo or presente,</i>	} a gift, a present.
<i>l'onore,</i>	the honour.
<i>il perdono,</i>	the pardon.
<i>una barzelletta, uno scherzo, un motto,</i>	} a jest or witty saying.
<i>un bisticcio,</i>	a pun.
<i>spirito,</i>	wit.
<i>il vizio,</i>	vice.
<i>la scelleratezza, la ri- balderia,</i>	} wickedness.
<i>la mansuetudine,</i>	meekness.
<i>la frode, l'inganno la truffa,</i>	} deceit.
<i>la trama,</i>	the plot.
<i>l'astuzia, la malizia,</i>	the craft.
<i>un briccone, }</i>	a rogue.
<i>un birbante, }</i>	
<i>un furbo,</i>	a knave.
<i>la bassezza,</i>	the meanness.
<i>la viltà,</i>	the baseness.
<i>uno ghiottone, uno leccar- do, un'ingordo.</i>	} a glutton.
<i>la ghiottoneria,</i>	gluttony.
<i>l'imbriachezza, l'eb- brietà, l'ubriachez- za,</i>	} drunkenness.
<i>la lussuria,</i>	the luxury.
<i>la dissolutezza,</i>	lewdness.
<i>la superbia, l'orgoglio, }</i>	the pride.
<i>l'alterigia,</i>	
<i>la bugia,</i>	the lye.

<i>la petulanza, l'arroganza,</i>	the sauciness.
<i>l'affannone, il facendone,</i>	a busy-body.
<i>un burlone, un cianciatore,</i>	} a trifler.
<i>or motteggiatore,</i>	
<i>le ciancie, le frascberie,</i>	the trifles.
<i>il lusso, lo sfoggio,</i>	the riotousness.
<i>la prodigalità,</i>	the prodigality.
<i>lo scialacquamento,</i>	the squandering.
<i>l'avarizia, la spilorceria,</i>	the covetousness.
<i>la temerità, la presunzione,</i>	the rashness.
<i>la codardia, la poltroneria,</i>	the cowardice.
<i>la pigrizia,</i>	the laziness.
<i>la contumacia, l'ostinazione,</i>	the obstinacy.
<i>l'incostanza, la volubilità,</i>	fickleness.
<i>l'ingratitude, la sconos-</i>	} the ingratitude.
<i>scenza,</i>	
<i>l'impietà, l'empietà,</i>	ungodliness.
<i>la libidine, la concupiscenza,</i>	the lust.
<i>la crudeltà,</i>	the cruelty.
<i>la disputa, la contesa,</i>	} the strife.
<i>il dibattimento,</i>	
<i>un cicalone, un garrulo,</i>	} a prater.
<i>or parabolano,</i>	
<i>il cicaleccio,</i>	babbling or prating.
<i>un ladro, un mariolo,</i>	a thief.
<i>un'assassino,</i>	a murderer.
<i>l'avversità, la sciagura,</i>	the adversity.
<i>un fursantello, un furbetto,</i>	a rake-hell.
<i>la punizione, il castigo,</i>	} the punishment.
<i>la pena.</i>	

Dei Parenti.

Of Kindred.

<i>La genealogia,</i>	A genealogy.
<i>il parente, il congiunto,</i>	a kin.
<i>gli antenati,</i>	ancestors.
<i>i posteri, i discendenti,</i>	} posterity.
<i>la posterità,</i>	

<i>il padre,</i>	the father.
<i>la madre,</i>	the mother.
<i>i genitori, il padre e la madre,</i>	} the parents.
<i>il nonno,</i>	the grandfather.
<i>la nonna,</i>	the grandmother.
<i>i figliuoli,</i>	the children.
<i>il figlio,</i>	the son.
<i>la figlia,</i>	the daughter.
<i>il nipote,</i>	the grand-son.
<i>la nipote,</i>	the grand-daughter.
<i>il fratello,</i>	the brother.
<i>la sorella,</i>	the sister.
<i>i gemelli,</i>	the twins.
<i>il fratel carnale, cioè nato del medesimo padre, il germano,</i>	} the brother by the same father.
<i>il fratello uterino,</i>	} the brother by the mother's side.
<i>il suocero,</i>	the father-in-law
<i>la suocera,</i>	the mother-in-law
<i>il genero,</i>	the son-in-law
<i>la nuora,</i>	the daughter-in-law
<i>il marito della sorella, or il fratello della moglie, il cognato,</i>	} the brother-in-law, the husband's brother.
<i>la cognata, la sorella della moglie or la moglie del fratello,</i>	} the sister-in-law, the husband's sister.
<i>cognate, or mogli di due fratelli,</i>	} brothers wives.
<i>un patrigno,</i>	a step-father.
<i>una matrigna,</i>	a step-mother.
<i>un figliastro,</i>	a step-son.
<i>una figliastrea,</i>	a step-daughter.

<i>il zio,</i>	an uncle.
<i>la zia,</i>	an aunt.
<i>il nipote,</i>	the nephew.
<i>la nipote,</i>	the niece.
<i>un cugino,</i>	a he cousin.
<i>una cugina,</i>	a she cousin.
<i>il matrimonio,</i>	wedlock or matrimony.
<i>le nozze,</i>	the marriage or wedding.
<i>il marito,</i>	the husband.
<i>la moglie,</i>	the wife.
<i>uno sposo,</i>	a bridegroom.
<i>una sposa,</i>	a bride.
<i>l' amante, l' amoroso, l' } innamorado,</i>	a lover.
<i>uno scapolo, uno smogliato,</i>	a batchelor.
<i>la dote,</i>	a woman's portion
<i>il talamo, la camera nuz- } ziale,</i>	the bride-chamber.
<i>un vedovo,</i>	a widower.
<i>una vedova,</i>	a widow.
<i>un bastardo, un figlio na- } turale,</i>	a bastard.
<i>un' orfano, un pupillo,</i>	an orphan.
<i>l' erede,</i>	the heir.
<i>la erede,</i>	the heiress.
<i>il padrone,</i>	the master.
<i>il servo, il servidore,</i>	the he servant.
<i>la serva,</i>	the she servant.
<i>la donna di parto,</i>	a woman in child-bed.
<i>una levatrice, una commare,</i>	a midwife.
<i>una balia, una nutrice,</i>	a nurse.

*De' cibi, delle cose appar-
tenenti alla cucina ed a
bere il Te.*

*Of victuals and things be-
longing to kitchen and to
drink Tea.*

*Il fior di farina,
il pane,*

*fine flour.
the bread.*

<i>la crosta,</i>	the crust.
<i>la mollica,</i>	the crumb.
<i>la carne,</i>	the meat.
<i>la vaccina, la carne di } bue, or di vacca,</i>	the beef.
<i>la vitella,</i>	the veal.
<i>il montone, or castrato,</i>	the mutton.
<i>l' agnello,</i>	the lamb.
<i>la carne porcina, del porco,</i>	the pork.
<i>il pollame,</i>	the poultry or fowls.
<i>la salvaggina, la salvaticina,</i>	the venison.
<i>il lardo,</i>	the bacon.
<i>il presciutto,</i>	a gammon of bacon.
<i>il cibreo,</i>	the minc'd-meat.
<i>la fricassea,</i>	a fricassée.
<i>l' arrosto.</i>	the roast-meat.
<i>il lessò,</i>	the boil'd-meat.
<i>un' uovo,</i>	an egg.
<i>il cacio, il formaggio,</i>	the cheese.
<i>il butiro, il burro,</i>	the butter.
<i>il fior di latte,</i>	the cream.
<i>il sale,</i>	the salt.
<i>la mostarda,</i>	the mustard.
<i>la saliera,</i>	a salt-seller.
<i>la pappa, il pancotto,</i>	the pap.
<i>la farinata,</i>	the water-gruel.
<i>una torta,</i>	a tart.
<i>una crostata, un pasticcio,</i>	a pye.
<i>il brodo,</i>	the broth.
<i>la minestra,</i>	the soup.
<i>una mortadella,</i>	a gut-pudding.
<i>una salsiccia,</i>	a sausage.
<i>il podino,</i>	the pudding.
<i>un podino bollito,</i>	a boil'd pudding.
<i>un sanguinaccio,</i>	a black pudding.
<i>una focaccia,</i>	a cake.
<i>una fritella,</i>	a fritter or pancake.

<i>il pospasto, le frutta,</i>	the differt.
<i>l' aceto,</i>	vinegar.
<i>la zuccheriera,</i>	the sugar-box.
<i>la pepajuola,</i>	the pepper-box.
<i>una tavoletta da Te,</i>	a tea-table.
<i>un cucchiarino,</i>	a tea-spoon.
<i>una caldarina,</i>	a tea-kettle.
<i>l' orciolo da Te,</i>	a tea-pot.
<i>il beccuccio,</i>	the spout.
<i>l' orciolo dello zucchero,</i>	a sugar-pot.
<i>una tazza,</i>	a dish.
<i>un piattino,</i>	a faucer.
<i>le mollette,</i>	a pair of tongs.
<i>un mestolino,</i>	a strainer.
<i>l' acqua bollente,</i>	boiling water.
<i>un bacino, un bacile,</i>	a bason.
<i>l' oglio,</i>	the oil.
<i>l' insalata,</i>	the sallad.
<i>un boccone,</i>	a morsel or mouthful.
<i>la collazione,</i>	the breakfast.
<i>il desinare, il pranzo,</i>	the dinner.
<i>la cena,</i>	the supper.
<i>un convito, or banchetto,</i>	a feast.
<i>un convitato, or commensale,</i>	a guest.
<i>un banchetto or pasto solenne</i>	a banquet.
<i>un trinciante,</i>	a carver.
<i>una mensa, or tavola,</i>	a table.
<i>il primo servito,</i>	the first course.
<i>il secondo servito,</i>	the second course.
<i>la tovaglia,</i>	the table-cloth.
<i>un tovagliolo, una salvietta,</i>	a napkin, a towel.
<i>un cucchiaro,</i>	a spoon.
<i>un coltello,</i>	a knife.
<i>una forchetta,</i>	a fork.
<i>una ofata,</i>	{ a plate, with knife, fork, spoon, and napkin.
<i>la credenza,</i>	
	the side-board.

una sala, a dining-room.
un piatto reale, a dish.
un piatto, un tondo, a plate.

Della Bevanda.

Of Drinkables.

La bevanda, The drink.
il vino, the wine.
il mosto, il vin nuovo, the new wine.
il vino melato, { the wine and honey
 } mixt together.
il vin puro, the pure wine.
la birra, la cervogia, the beer or ale.
l'orzo preparato a far }
birra, the malt.
il ruvistico, il luppolo, the hops.
la feccia, the dregs.
una coppa, a bowl.
una tazza da bere, a cup to drink out of.
un bicchiere, a drinking-glass.
una caraffa, una guastada, a vial.
una caraffina, una gua- }
stadetta, a little vial.
il turacciolo, the cork.
lo sturacciolo, the screw.
un fiasco, a flask.
una botteglia, a bottle.
il canavajo, the butler.
il coppiere, the cup-bearer.

Cose delle quali ci serviamo per fare abiti, e dei colori. Things that we make Cloth of, and of Colours.

La lana, The wool.
il panno, the woollen-cloth.
la felpa, the plush.
il drogchetto, the drugget.
la saja, the serge.

<i>lo stame,</i>	the worsted.
<i>la flanella,</i>	the flannel.
<i>il ciambellotto,</i>	the camblet.
<i>il lino,</i>	the flax.
<i>la tela,</i>	the linen.
<i>la cambraja,</i>	the cambrick.
<i>la canapa,</i>	the tow.
<i>la stoppa,</i>	the hemp.
<i>il cotone, la bambagia,</i>	the cotton.
<i>il bambagino,</i>	the callicoe.
<i>il fustanio,</i>	the fustian.
<i>la seta,</i>	the silk.
<i>il drappo di seta,</i>	the silk-cloth.
<i>il velluto,</i>	the velvet.
<i>il raso,</i>	the satten.
<i>il damasco,</i>	the damask.
<i>il lustrino,</i>	the lustring.
<i>il taffetà,</i>	the taffety.
<i>lo scarlatto,</i>	the scarlet-cloth.
<i>il broccato,</i>	the brocade.
<i>il colore,</i>	the colour.
<i>bianco,</i>	white.
<i>nero, negro,</i>	black.
<i>verde,</i>	green.
<i>ceruleo,</i>	sea-green.
<i>verdechiaro, verdegajo,</i>	light-green.
<i>verdebruno,</i>	dark-green.
<i>verdegiallo,</i>	yellow-green.
<i>turchino,</i>	blue.
<i>azzurro, }</i>	sky-blue.
<i>cilestro, }</i>	light-blue.
<i>turchino chiaro,</i>	blue-grey.
<i>turchino scuro,</i>	purple-colour.
<i>pavonazzo,</i>	light-colour.
<i>porporino,</i>	red.
<i>rosso,</i>	crimson.
<i>cremifino,</i>	scarlet.
<i>scarlatto,</i>	

<i>giallo,</i>	yellow.
<i>grigio,</i>	grey.
<i>grigioferro.</i>	dark-grey:
<i>cenerino, or bigio,</i>	ash-colour.
<i>rosato, roseo,</i>	rose-colour.
<i>lattato,</i>	milk-colour.
<i>perlato,</i>	pearl-colour.
<i>verdiccio,</i>	greenish.
<i>gialliccio,</i>	yellowish.
<i>bruno,</i>	brown.
<i>chiaro,</i>	light.
<i>vivo, vivace,</i>	lively.
<i>lucido, brillante,</i>	bright.
<i>grave,</i>	grave.
<i>gajo, allegro,</i>	gay.
<i>fiorato,</i>	flowered.
<i>riccamato,</i>	embroidered.
<i>gallonato,</i>	laced.
<i>trapuntato,</i>	quilted.
<i>listato,</i>	striped.
<i>ondato,</i>	watered.
<i>ondeggiato,</i>	scalloped.

Abiti d'Uomo, e che porta adosso.

Man's Cloaths, and other Ornaments.

<i>Un vestito,</i>	}	A suit of cloaths.
<i>un' abito,</i>		
<i>un tabarro,</i>	}	a cloke.
<i>un ferajolo,</i>		
<i>un mantello,</i>	}	a riding coat.
<i>un palandrano,</i>		
<i>un giustacore,</i>		a close-coat.
<i>una camiciola,</i>		a waistcoat.
<i>i calzoni,</i>		breeches.
<i>le calzette,</i>		stockings.
<i>la manica,</i>		the sleeve.

<i>il fornimento,</i>	the trimming.
<i>il gallone,</i>	the gold lace.
<i>la frangia,</i>	the fringe.
<i>la fodera,</i>	the lining.
<i>un bottone,</i>	a button.
<i>la bottoniera,</i>	the button-holes.
<i>la scarfella,</i>	} the pocket or fob.
<i>la saccoccia,</i>	
<i>la tasca,</i>	
<i>una veste da camera,</i>	a night-gown.
<i>un giubbone,</i>	a doublet.
<i>una scarpa,</i>	a shoe.
<i>una scarpina,</i>	a pump.
<i>le fibbie,</i>	buckles.
<i>l'ardiglione,</i>	the tongue of a buckle.
<i>le pianelle,</i>	slippers.
<i>la biancheria,</i>	linen.
<i>la camiccia,</i>	a shirt.
<i>le mutande,</i>	drawers.
<i>i manicchetti,</i>	} ruffles.
<i>i manicchini,</i>	
<i>un collare,</i>	a band.
<i>un collarino,</i>	a stock.
<i>una cravatta,</i>	a cravat.
<i>un fazzoletto,</i>	a handkerchief.
<i>una berretta,</i>	a man's cap.
<i>le legaccio,</i>	garters.
<i>il cappello,</i>	a hat.
<i>la perucca,</i>	a wig.
<i>un guanto,</i>	a glove.
<i>un manicotto,</i>	a muff.
<i>la spada,</i>	the sword.
<i>il pendone,</i>	the belt.
<i>gli stivali,</i>	boots.
<i>gli stivaletti,</i>	thin boots.
<i>gli sproni,</i>	spurs.
<i>un' anello,</i>	a ring.

<i>l'orivolo,</i>	the watch.
<i>il sigillo,</i>	the seal.
<i>la tabacchiera,</i>	the snuff-box.
<i>la borsa,</i>	the purse.
<i>uno steccadenti or nettadenti,</i>	a tooth-picker.
<i>un netta orecchie,</i>	an ear-picker.
<i>uno stucchio,</i>	a case.
<i>gli occhiali,</i>	the spectacles.
<i>il centurino.</i>	the girdle.

**Abiti di donna e che
porta adosso.**

**Women's wearing apparel
and other ornaments.**

<i>La gonna,</i>	The gown.
<i>la gonnella,</i>	the petticoat.
<i>la soggonna, la sottana,</i>	the under petticoat.
<i>la stecca,</i>	the stays.
<i>il busto,</i>	the busk.
<i>il puntale,</i>	the tag.
<i>un guardinfante,</i>	a hoop-petticoat.
<i>una cammicia,</i>	a shift.
<i>una camiciola,</i>	a boddice.
<i>un mantello,</i>	a mantua.
<i>una scuffia, una cuffia,</i>	a cap.
<i>i manicchetti,</i>	} the ruffles.
<i>i manicchini,</i>	
<i>la mantellina,</i>	the combing-cloth.
<i>il grembiule,</i>	the apron.
<i>un vezzo di perle,</i>	a necklace of pearls.
<i>una collana d'oro,</i>	a gold chain.
<i>gli orecchini,</i>	the ear-rings.
<i>i pendenti,</i>	the pendants.
<i>il ventaglio,</i>	the fan.
<i>un neo,</i>	a patch.
<i>il belletto,</i>	the paint.
<i>una spilla,</i>	a pin.
<i>un' ago,</i>	a needle.

<i>un ditale,</i>	a thimble.
<i>le forbici,</i>	scissars.
<i>il merletto,</i>	the lace.
<i>il pettine,</i>	the comb.
<i>il nastro,</i>	the ribbon.
<i>un gioello, una gioja,</i>	a jewel.

Degli Edificj e quel che appartiene a loro. *Of Buildings and what belongs to them.*

<i>Una città,</i>	a city.
<i>la porta d' una città,</i>	the gate of a city.
<i>le mura, le muraglie d' una città,</i>	} the walls of a city.
<i>le fortificazioni,</i>	
<i>un ponte,</i>	the fortifications.
<i>un ponte levatojo,</i>	a bridge.
<i>un ponte di legno,</i>	a draw-bridge.
<i>un bastione, or terrapieno,</i>	a timber-bridge.
<i>una torre,</i>	a rampier or rampart.
<i>la fortezza, la cittadella,</i>	a tower.
<i>una casa,</i>	a fort or citadel.
<i>un palazzo,</i>	a house.
<i>il palazzo reale or la reggia,</i>	a palace.
<i>la muraglia, il muro della casa,</i>	the king's palace.
<i>una pietra,</i>	} the wall of a house.
<i>un mattone,</i>	
<i>la calcina,</i>	a stone.
<i>la calcia,</i>	a brick.
<i>il calcinaccio,</i>	the lime.
<i>una finestra,</i>	the mortar.
<i>una fessura, or fenditura,</i>	the rubbish.
<i>l' inferrata, la gelosia,</i>	a window.
<i>la porta, l'uscio,</i>	a chink.
<i>la porta di camera,</i>	the lattice.
<i>la porta, or l'uscio di dietro,</i>	the house-door or gate.
<i>un bussatore, or battente,</i>	the chamber-door.
	the back-door.
	a knocker.

<i>la soglia,</i>	the threshold.
<i>un' imposta,</i>	a post.
<i>un cardine, un' arpione,</i>	} a hinge.
<i>un ganghero,</i>	
<i>un chiovistello, un cate-</i>	} a bolt.
<i>naccio,</i>	
<i>una serratura,</i>	a lock.
<i>una chiave,</i>	a key.
<i>una sbarra,</i>	a bar.
<i>il tetto,</i>	the roof or top.
<i>la gronda,</i>	the eaves of an house.
<i>un' assicella,</i>	a shingle.
<i>un tegolo, una tegola,</i>	a tile.
<i>una grondaja grande,</i>	} a gutter receiving the rain of divers roofs.
<i>un' embrice,</i>	
<i>un' asse,</i>	} a hollow tile, a gutter- tile.
<i>l' assicella, la tavoletta,</i>	
<i>un trave, una trave,</i>	a board or plank.
<i>un perticone, una pertica,</i>	a little board or a lath.
<i>una travatura,</i>	a beam.
<i>uno travicello,</i>	a long pole.
<i>un cortile,</i>	a rafter.
<i>la facciata,</i>	a joist.
<i>una colonna,</i>	a court-yard.
<i>un pilastro,</i>	the fore-front of a house.
<i>la cornice,</i>	a pillar.
<i>il fregio,</i>	a pilaster.
<i>l' architrave,</i>	the cornice.
<i>il capitello,</i>	the freeze.
<i>il fuso, or il fusto della co-</i>	the architrave.
<i>lonna,</i>	the chapter or capital.
<i>la base della colonna,</i>	the shaft or shank of a pillar.
<i>il piedestallo,</i>	the base of a pillar.
<i>il portico, l' antiporto,</i>	the pedestal.
<i>una camera,</i>	} the porch or entry to a house.
	a room or chamber.

<i>l' anticamera,</i>	the antichamber.
<i>la sala,</i>	the dining-room.
<i>la sala d' udienza,</i>	the drawing-room.
<i>il salone,</i>	the hall.
<i>una camera da letto,</i>	a bed-chamber.
<i>il gabinetto,</i>	the closet.
<i>uno studio,</i>	a study.
<i>la galleria, la loggia, or</i>	} the gallery or balcony.
<i>il balcone,</i>	
<i>la cucina,</i>	the kitchen.
<i>il forno,</i>	the oven.
<i>la dispensa,</i>	the buttery or store-house.
<i>la cantina,</i>	the cellar.
<i>il necessario,</i>	the house of office.
<i>il primo piano,</i>	the first floor.
<i>il secondo piano, &c.</i>	the second floor, &c.
<i>la scala,</i>	the stair-case.
<i>la scala a chiocciola or</i>	} a pair of winding-stairs.
<i>a lumaca,</i>	
<i>un' arco,</i>	an arch.
<i>il soffitto, la soffitta,</i>	} the cieling or roof of a chamber.
<i>un palco,</i>	
<i>il cammino,</i>	a story.
<i>il focolare,</i>	the chimney.
<i>un' albergo,</i>	the hearth or stove.
<i>una taverna,</i>	an inn.
<i>un' osteria,</i>	a tavern.
<i>bottega di cuoco,</i>	a victualling-house.
<i>una bottega,</i>	a cook's-shop.
<i>un' ospizio,</i>	a shop.
<i>uno spedale,</i>	} an hospital for poor strangers.
<i>la piazza, il mercato,</i>	
<i>il mercato de' buoi,</i>	an hospital for sick people.
<i>la pescheria,</i>	the market-place.
<i>la piazza dell' erbe,</i>	the market for oxen.
<i>il mercato dei porci,</i>	the fish-market.
<i>casa di correzzione,</i>	the herb-market.
	the market for swine.
	an house of correction.

<i>la prigione, la carcere,</i>	the prison or goal.
<i>un teatro,</i>	a play-house.
<i>una capanna,</i>	a cottage.
<i>una stalla,</i>	a stable.
<i>una mangiatoja,</i>	a manger.
<i>un portico,</i>	a portico or piazza.
<i>un tempio, una chiesa,</i>	a temple or church.
<i>una cappella,</i>	a chapel.
<i>la sacristia, la sagrestia,</i>	the vestry.
<i>il cimitero,</i>	the church-yard.
<i>un pulpito,</i>	a pulpit.
<i>una baracca,</i>	a hut.
<i>un tugurio,</i>	a poor little house.
<i>una tenda,</i>	a tent.
<i>un padiglione,</i>	a pavillion.
<i>un coperto,</i>	a shelter.

Delle Masserizie.

Of Household Furniture.

<i>La masserizia,</i>	Household goods.
<i>una sedia,</i>	a chair.
<i>uno sgabello,</i>	a stool.
<i>una cassapanca,</i>	a bench.
<i>un cuscino,</i>	a cushion.
<i>un letto,</i>	a bed.
<i>una lettiera,</i>	a bedstead.
<i>il cortinaggio,</i>	the bed-curtains.
<i>una cortina,</i>	a curtain.
<i>un materasso,</i>	a mattress.
<i>un materasso di lana,</i>	a flock-bed.
<i>un materasso di piuma,</i>	a feather-bed.
<i>un capezzale,</i>	a bolster.
<i>un guanciale,</i>	a pillow.
<i>una coltre,</i>	a quilt.
<i>una stuoja,</i>	a mat.
<i>una coperta,</i>	a blanket.
<i>una schiavina,</i>	a rug.
<i>il lenzuolo,</i>	the sheet.

<i>la cuna, una culla,</i>	a cradle.
<i>un cofano,</i>	a coffer, a chest.
<i>un forziere or forziere,</i>	} a trunk cover'd with } leather.
<i>una cassetta, un forzierino,</i>	a box or little trunk.
<i>una scala-a-pivoli,</i>	a ladder.
<i>una scatola,</i>	a box.
<i>un armario,</i>	a press.
<i>uno scrittorio, uno scrigno,</i>	an escrutore.
<i>il leggio,</i>	a desk.
<i>uno specchio,</i>	a looking-glass.
<i>la tappezzeria,</i>	tapestry-hangings.
<i>un tappeto,</i>	a carpet.
<i>un tappeto di tavola,</i>	a table-carpet.
<i>una paletta,</i>	a fire-shovel.
<i>le mollette,</i>	a pair of tongs.
<i>il forcione,</i>	the poker.
<i>il soffietto,</i>	the bellows.
<i>una forcinella,</i>	a fire-fork.
<i>una forcina,</i>	a stable-fork.
<i>un quadro, una pittura,</i>	a picture.

Gli strumenti da Cucina.

*Of things belonging to a
Kitchen.*

<i>Un coltello,</i>	A Knife.
<i>una forchetta,</i>	a fork.
<i>un cucchiaro, }</i>	
<i>uno scugliero, }</i>	a spoon.
<i>una padella,</i>	a frying-pan.
<i>un gradella,</i>	a gridiron.
<i>uno spiedo or schidone,</i>	a spit.
<i>una caldaja,</i>	a kettle.
<i>un padellino,</i>	a skellet.
<i>uno scaldavivande,</i>	a chafing-dish.
<i>un battifuoco, un focile, }</i>	
<i>l' acciarino, }</i>	a tinder-box and steel.
<i>l' esca,</i>	the tinder.

<i>un zolfanello,</i>	a match.
<i>una forcinella,</i>	a flesh-hook.
<i>uno schiumarello,</i>	a skimmer.
<i>una grattugia,</i>	a grater.
<i>un colatojo,</i>	a strainer or cullender.
<i>una mestola,</i>	a ladle.
<i>un mortajo,</i>	a mortar.
<i>un pestello,</i>	a pestle.
<i>un forbitajo, uno strofinaccio,</i>	a dish-clout.
<i>una spugna,</i>	a sponge.
<i>una scopa,</i>	a besom or broom.
<i>una pentola,</i>	a pot or seething-pot.
<i>un pentolino,</i>	a little pot or pipkin.
<i>un' orcio,</i>	a pitcher.
<i>una secchia,</i>	a bucket or pail.
<i>il manico,</i>	the handle.
<i>il coperchio,</i>	the lid or cover.
<i>un candeliere,</i>	a candlestick.
<i>lo smoccolatojo,</i>	the snuffers.
<i>una candela,</i>	a candle.
<i>una lucerna, una lampa,</i>	{ a lamp.
<i>or lampada,</i>	
<i>una torcia,</i>	a flambeau or torch.
<i>il lucignolo, lo stoppino,</i>	{ the match of a lamp or the wick of a candle.
<i>una lanterna,</i>	a lanthorn.
<i>un vaso,</i>	a vessel.
<i>un tino,</i>	a tub.
<i>una botte,</i>	a tun.
<i>un barile,</i>	a kilderkin.
<i>il turacciolo,</i>	the tap.
<i>una cannella,</i>	a cock.
<i>l' imbuto,</i>	the funnel.
<i>un cestone or corbello,</i>	a great twig-basket.
<i>una sporta,</i>	a frail.
<i>un canestro, la corba,</i>	a bread-basket.
<i>uno strettojo,</i>	a press.
<i>una bisaccia,</i>	a wallet.

Delle cose spettanti alla
Scuola, ed a' libri.

*Of things belonging to schools
and to books.*

La scuola,

The school.

una scuola di grammatica,

a grammar school.

una scuola di scherma,

a fencing school.

un maestro di scuola,

a school-master.

un precettore,

a master or tutor.

un sottomaestro,

an usher.

un discepolo, uno scolare

a scholar.

or scolaro,

un condiscipolo,

a school-fellow.

un convittore,

a boarder or fellow-boarder.

una classe,

a form or class.

il banco,

the seat.

un libro,

a book.

un libretto,

a little book.

un foglio,

a leaf.

una pagina, una facciata,

a side, a page.

il margine,

the margin.

la coperta d' un libro,

the cover of a book.

un volume, un tomo,

a volume.

una libreria or biblioteca,

a library.

un libro di memoria,

a memorandum-book.

lo spillo, lo stilo,

the stile or pin.

la carta,

the paper.

la carta reale or imperiale,

{ royal paper or imperial paper.

la carta da invoglio,

coarse-paper, pack-paper.

la carta sugante,

paper that sinks.

un foglio di carta,

a sheet of paper.

un quaderno di carta,

a quire of paper.

la carta pecora, la pergamena,

{ the parchment.

una riga,

a rule.

una linea,

a line.

una penna,

a pen.

<i>la punta della penna,</i>	the nib of a pen.
<i>la fenditura della penna,</i>	the slit of a pen.
<i>un temperino,</i>	a pen-knife.
<i>un pennajuolo,</i>	a pen-case.
<i>l' inchiostro,</i>	the ink.
<i>un calamaio,</i>	an ink-horn or standish.
<i>una lettera,</i>	a letter.
<i>una sillaba,</i>	a syllable.
<i>un vocabolo, una parola,</i>	} a word.
<i>una voce,</i>	
<i>una preposizione,</i>	a preposition.
<i>una frase, l' espressione,</i>	a phrase or expression.
<i>un periodo,</i>	a period.

Delle Scienze e delle Arti Liberali. *Of the Liberal Arts and Sciences.*

<i>La teologia,</i>	Divinity.
<i>un teologo,</i>	a divine.
<i>la filosofia,</i>	philosophy.
<i>un filosofo,</i>	a philosopher.
<i>la grammatica,</i>	the grammar.
<i>uno grammatico,</i>	a grammarian.
<i>la retorica,</i>	rhetoric.
<i>l' eloquenza,</i>	eloquence.
<i>un rettorico,</i>	{ a master of rhetoric, or
	{ a master of eloquence.
<i>un legista,</i>	a lawyer.
<i>la logica,</i>	logic.
<i>un logico,</i>	a master of logic.
<i>un sofista,</i>	a sophister.
<i>un' istorico, uno storico</i>	} an historian.
<i>un' istoriografo,</i>	
<i>un matematico,</i>	a mathematician.
<i>l' aritmetica, l' abbaco,</i>	arithmetic.
<i>un' aritmetico, un' abba-</i>	} an arithmetician.
<i>chista,</i>	
<i>un numero,</i>	a number.

<i>l' astronomia,</i>	astronomy.
<i>un' astronomo,</i>	an astronomer.
<i>l' astrologia,</i>	astrology.
<i>un' astrologo,</i>	an astrologer.
<i>la geometria,</i>	geometry.
<i>un geometra, un geometro,</i>	a geometrician.
<i>la geografia,</i>	geography.
<i>un geografo,</i>	a geographer.
<i>la chirurgia,</i>	chirurgery.
<i>un chirurgo, un cerusico,</i>	a surgeon.
<i>la musica,</i>	music.
<i>un musico,</i>	a musician.
<i>un poeta tragico,</i>	a writer of tragedies.
<i>un poeta comico,</i>	a writer of comedies.
<i>un poeta lirico,</i>	a lyric-poet.
<i>la pittura,</i>	painting.
<i>un pittore,</i>	} a painter or picture-
	} drawer.
<i>un ritrattista,</i>	a face-painter.
<i>un ritratto,</i>	a portraiture.
<i>mezza figura, una testa,</i>	a half-length, a head.
<i>la scultura,</i>	sculpture.
<i>uno scultore,</i>	a sculptor.
<i>l' architettura,</i>	architecture.
<i>un' architetto,</i>	an architect.
<i>uno statuario,</i>	a statuary.

Delle Arti meccaniche.

Of the Mechanical Arts.

<i>Un artifice, un' artigiano,</i>	A tradesman.
<i>un bottegaio,</i>	a shop-keeper.
<i>un' orefice,</i>	a gold-smith.
<i>un' argentiere,</i>	a silver-smith.
<i>un' orologiaio,</i>	a watch-maker.
<i>un gioielliere,</i>	a jeweller.
<i>un confettiere,</i>	a confectioner.
<i>un librajo,</i>	a book-seller.
<i>un cartolajo,</i>	a stationer.
<i>uno stampatore,</i>	a printer.

<i>un parrucchiere,</i>	a perriwig-maker.
<i>un barbiere,</i>	a barber.
<i>un fornajo,</i>	a baker.
<i>un ferraio, un fabbro,</i>	a black-smith.
<i>un chiavaro,</i>	a lock-smith.
<i>un maniscalco,</i>	a farrier.
<i>un calderajo,</i>	a brasier.
<i>un muratore,</i>	a brick-layer or mason.
<i>un macellajo,</i>	a butcher.
<i>un falegname,</i>	a carpenter.
<i>un marangone,</i>	a joiner.
<i>un tapezziere,</i>	an upholsterer.
<i>un guantaro,</i>	a glover.
<i>un caldararo,</i>	a brazier.
<i>un sellaro,</i>	a saddler.
<i>un sartore,</i>	a taylor.
<i>un candelottajo,</i>	a chandler.
<i>un carbonajo,</i>	a collier.
<i>un fruttajuolo,</i>	a man that sells fruit.
<i>un calzolare,</i>	a shoe-maker.
<i>un ciavattino,</i>	a cobbler.
<i>un muratore,</i>	a mason.
<i>un cuoco,</i>	a cook.
<i>un pasticciere,</i>	a pastry-cook.
<i>un rosticciere,</i>	a cook that keeps shop.
<i>un coltellajo,</i>	a cutler.
<i>uno spadajo,</i>	a sword-cutler.
<i>un tintore,</i>	a dyer.
<i>un cavamacchie,</i>	a fuller.
<i>un pellicciaio,</i>	a currier.
<i>un vetrajo,</i>	a glass-maker or a glazier.
<i>un droghiere,</i>	a grocer.
<i>un cappellajo,</i>	a hatter.
<i>un' erbajuolo,</i>	an herb-seller.
<i>un calzettajo,</i>	a hosier.
<i>un mulinajo, un mugnajo,</i>	a miller.
<i>un pescivendolo,</i>	a fishmonger.
<i>un pescatore,</i>	a fisherman.

<i>un cacciatore,</i>	a hunter.
<i>un profumiere,</i>	a perfumer.
<i>uno stagnajo,</i>	a pewterer.
<i>un pollajuolo,</i>	a poulterer.
<i>un ballator di corda,</i>	a rope-dancer.
<i>un commediante,</i>	a stage-player.
<i>un suggeritore,</i>	a prompter.
<i>uno scarpellino,</i>	a stone-cutter.
<i>un conciatore,</i>	a tanner.
<i>un tavernajo,</i>	a vintner.
<i>un bottajo,</i>	a cooper.
<i>un tessitore,</i>	a weaver.
<i>un baullaro,</i>	a trunk-maker.
<i>un cocchiere,</i>	a coach-man.
<i>un seggettiere,</i>	a chair-man.
<i>un lavoratore,</i>	{ a workman or handy-
<i>un facchino,</i>	{ craft's-man.
	a porter.

Ufficiali di Giustizia.

Officers of Justice.

<i>Il Parlamento,</i>	The Parliament.
<i>la camera Alta,</i>	the House of Lords.
<i>la camera Bassa,</i>	{ the House of Commons.
<i>la camera dei Comuni,</i>	
<i>il Presidente,</i>	{ the Speaker.
<i>l'Oratore,</i>	
<i>il Cancelliere,</i>	the Chancellor.
<i>un giudice.</i>	a judge.
<i>un giudice di pace,</i>	a justice of the peace.
<i>un registratore,</i>	a recorder.
<i>un consigliere,</i>	a serjeant at law.
<i>un' avvocato,</i>	a lawyer.
<i>un procuratore,</i>	an attorney.
<i>un notaro,</i>	a notary.
<i>uno scrivano,</i>	a clerk.
<i>uno sbirro,</i>	a serjeant or bailey.
<i>un carceriere,</i>	a goaler.

un boja,

a hangman.

D' un' Armata.

Of an Army.

Il general d' un' armata,
un luogotenente generale,
un general di cavalleria,
un colonello di fanteria,
un maresciallo di campo,
un capitano,
un reggimento,
una compagnia di fanteria,
un capitano di cent' uomini,
una compagnia di cent' uomini,
una compagnia di cavalleria,
un' alfiere,
un trombetta,
un' esercito squadronato,
un' esercito che marcia,
un battaglione,
uno squadrone,
un tamburo,

The general of an army.
 a lieutenant-general.
 a general of horse.
 a colonel of foot.
 a quarter-master-general.
 a captain.
 a regiment.
 a company of foot.
 a captain over an hundred men.
 a company of an hundred men.
 a troop of horse.
 an ensign.
 a trumpeter.
 an army in battle-array.
 an army marching.
 a battalion.
 a squadron.
 a drum.

Delle Cose Nautiche.

Of Naval Affairs.

*Un' armata navale, una }
 flotta, }
 una nave, un vascello, }
 una nave mercantile, }
 una nave da guerra, }
 una galera, }
 una galeotta, }
 la capitana, l' ammirante, }*

A fleet, a navy.
 a ship or vessel.
 a merchant-man.
 a man of war.
 a galley with three banks of oars.
 a galley with two banks of oars.
 an admiral or flag-ship.

<i>lo scifo,</i>	the skiff or cock-boat.
<i>una barca peschereccia,</i>	a fisher-boat.
<i>un pontone,</i>	a ferry-boat.
<i>un battello, una barchetta,</i>	a boat.
<i>un battelliere,</i>	a ferryman, a boatman.
<i>la carena,</i>	the keel of a ship.
<i>la prua, la prora, la proda,</i>	{ the prow, the forepart of a ship.
<i>la poppa,</i>	the stern or poop.
<i>lo sperone,</i>	{ the beak or beak-head of a ship.
<i>lo scaffo,</i>	the hulk or hold of a ship.
<i>il timone,</i>	the helm or rudder.
<i>la corsia, la coverta,</i>	the deck.
<i>il cassero,</i>	the quarter-deck.
<i>un vogatore or remigante,</i>	a rower.
<i>il remeggio, il palamento,</i>	{ the whole crew of slaves in a galley.
<i>un remo,</i>	an oar.
<i>i banchi,</i>	{ the seats where the rowers sit.
<i>una vela,</i>	a sail.
<i>l' antenna,</i>	the sail-yard.
<i>un' albero,</i>	a mast.
<i>l' artimone, la vela maestra,</i>	the main-sail.
<i>il trinchetto,</i>	the fore-sail.
<i>la mezzana,</i>	the mizzen-sail.
<i>la gabbia,</i>	the top-sail.
<i>una fune or corda,</i>	a rope.
<i>una gomina,</i>	a cable.
<i>un' ancora,</i>	an anchor.
<i>la zavorra, la stiva,</i>	the ballast.
<i>il nocchiere, il padrone,</i>	the master of a ship.
<i>il pilota,</i>	the pilot.
<i>un marinaio,</i>	a seaman or mariner.
<i>un naufragio,</i>	a shipwreck.
<i>il porto, la darsena,</i>	a seaport, an harbour.
<i>una chiusa,</i>	a sluice.
<i>un mastro di navi,</i>	a shipwright.

<i>una battaglia navale,</i>	a sea-fight.
<i>la sentina,</i>	the sink.
<i>la bussola,</i>	the compass.
<i>lo scandaglio,</i>	the sounding-line.
<i>le banderuole,</i>	the pendants of a ship.
<i>lo stendardo, il gonfalone,</i>	the flag.

Delle Cose Villareccie.

Of Country Affairs.

<i>La campagna,</i>	The country.
<i>un contadino,</i>	a countryman.
<i>un' agricoltore,</i>	a husbandman.
<i>un podere,</i>	a farm.
<i>una possessione or casa di campagna,</i>	} a country-house.
<i>un campo,</i>	a field.
<i>un prato,</i>	a meadow.
<i>un castaldo or fattore,</i>	a bailiff or steward.
<i>un colono or mezzajuolo,</i>	a farmer.
<i>un campo, un seminale,</i>	arable land.
<i>una piota,</i>	a turf.
<i>una zolla or gleba,</i>	a clod.
<i>il letame, lo stabbio,</i>	the dung.
<i>un' aratro,</i>	a plough.
<i>il vomero,</i>	the plough-share.
<i>il coltro,</i>	the coulter.
<i>la stiva, il manico dell' aratro,</i>	} the plough-handle.
<i>un' aratore un bifolco,</i>	a ploughman.
<i>un' erpice,</i>	a harrow.
<i>un sarchiatore,</i>	a weeder.
<i>il sarchio, il sarchiello,</i>	{ the weeding-hook or hoe.
<i>un giogo,</i>	a yoke.
<i>un pungolo or stimolo,</i>	a goad.
<i>un solco,</i>	a furrow.
<i>la sponda del solco,</i>	a ridge.
<i>un seminatore,</i>	a sower.

<i>un jugero,</i>	an acre.
<i>la semenza,</i>	the seed.
<i>la raccolta,</i>	the harvest.
<i>lo spigolare,</i>	the gleanings.
<i>un mietitore,</i>	a reaper.
<i>una falce,</i>	a sickle.
<i>un trebbiatore,</i>	a threshing-machine.
<i>una trebbia,</i>	a flail.
<i>l'aja,</i>	the threshing-floor.
<i>un vaglio,</i>	a fan.
<i>un crivello,</i>	a sieve.
<i>un sacco,</i>	a sack.
<i>uno granajo,</i>	a barn or granary.
<i>la pastura, il pascolo,</i>	the pasture.
<i>l'erba,</i>	the grass.
<i>il fieno,</i>	the hay.
<i>un falciatore,</i>	a mower of hay.
<i>un fienile,</i>	a hay-loft.
<i>un mucchio di fieno or pagliajo,</i>	a hay-cock.
<i>una manata di fieno,</i>	a truss of hay.
<i>una roncola,</i>	a scythe.
<i>un forcione,</i>	a fork.
<i>un rastro,</i>	a rake.
<i>un carro,</i>	a wain.
<i>una carretta, un plaustro,</i>	a cart.
<i>una ruota,</i>	a wheel.
<i>un razzo,</i>	a spoke.
<i>l'asse della ruota,</i>	the axle-tree.
<i>la carreggiata,</i>	the track of a cart.
<i>un carrettiere,</i>	a carter or waggoner.
<i>una frusta, uno staffile,</i>	a whip.
<i>le redini,</i>	the reins.
<i>la briglia,</i>	the bridle.
<i>un giardino,</i>	a garden.
<i>l'orto,</i>	the kitchen-garden.
<i>un giardiniere,</i>	a gardener.
<i>l'ortolano,</i>	the kitchen-gardener.

<i>un pomario,</i>	an orchard.
<i>una vigna,</i>	a vineyard.
<i>un palo,</i>	a vine-prop, a pole for hops.
<i>un vignajuolo,</i>	a vine-dresser.
<i>una fratta,</i>	a hedge.
<i>una siepe,</i>	a quickset-hedge.
<i>un fosso,</i>	a ditch.
<i>un zappatore,</i>	a digger.
<i>un viale coperto,</i>	an arbour.
<i>un quaderno di erbe or fiori,</i>	a bed in a garden.
<i>una zappa,</i>	a spade.
<i>la pala,</i>	a shovel.
<i>un piccone,</i>	a pick-ax.
<i>una vanga,</i>	a mattock.
<i>un cilindro,</i>	a roller.
<i>una carrivola,</i>	a wheel-barrow.
<i>una foresta,</i>	a forest.
<i>un bosco, una selva,</i>	a wood.
<i>una selvetta, un boschetto,</i>	a grove.
<i>un fascio,</i>	a faggot.
<i>la stipa,</i>	brush-wood or bavin.
<i>le sceggie,</i>	chips.
<i>il legno,</i>	wood.
<i>un seminario or piantamajo,</i>	a nursery.
<i>un parco,</i>	a park.

De i Quadrupedi.

Of four-footed Beasts.

<i>Il bestame,</i>	Cattle.
<i>il gregge, la greggia,</i>	a flock.
<i>l'armento, la mandra,</i>	an herd.
<i>un giumento or somiere,</i>	a labouring beast.
<i>una fera or fiera, una belva,</i>	a wild beast.
<i>la pelle irsuta, setosa,</i>	a rough and hairy skin,
<i>la scbiena,</i>	the skin of a beast.
<i>il cuojo, il corame, la pelle,</i>	a hide.
	any skin or leather.

<i>un corno,</i>	a horn.
<i>un' unghia,</i>	a hoof.
<i>una setola,</i>	a bristle.
<i>il crine,</i>	a mane.
<i>un vello,</i>	a fleece.
<i>la lana,</i>	wool.
<i>una coda,</i>	a tail.
<i>la proboscide,</i>	{ the snout or trunk of an elephant.
<i>la giogaja, la pagliola,</i>	
	{ the dew-lap of an ox or cow.

Inomi de i Quadrupedi.

The names of four-footed Beasts.

<i>Uno scimmione, una scimmia grande,</i>	{ An ape.
<i>un gattomammone,</i>	
<i>un' asino,</i>	a monkey.
<i>un tasso,</i>	an afs.
<i>un' orso,</i>	a badger.
<i>un castore,</i>	a bear.
<i>un verro,</i>	a beaver.
<i>un cinghiale or cignale,</i>	a boar.
<i>un bufalo,</i>	a wild-boar.
<i>un toro,</i>	a buffalo.
<i>un giovenco,</i>	a bull.
<i>un vitello,</i>	a bullock.
<i>un camelo,</i>	a calf.
<i>un gatto,</i>	a camel.
<i>un camaleonte,</i>	a cat.
<i>un coniglio,</i>	a camelion.
<i>una vacca,</i>	a rabbit.
<i>un coccodrillo,</i>	a cow.
<i>un daino,</i>	a crocodile.
<i>un cane or una cagna,</i>	a deer.
<i>un cagnolino, una cagnolina,</i>	a dog or bitch.
<i>il latrato, l' abbajamento,</i>	a lap-dog or bitch.
	the barking.

<i>un collarino,</i>	a dog's collar,
<i>un ghiro,</i>	a dormouse.
<i>un dragone or drago,</i>	a dragon.
<i>un dromedario,</i>	a dromedary.
<i>un' elefante.</i>	an elephant.
<i>la granbestia,</i>	an elk.
<i>un capriolo,</i>	a fawn.
<i>un furetto,</i>	a ferret.
<i>una volpe,</i>	a fox.
<i>un cavallo castrato,</i>	a gelding.
<i>un becco or caprone,</i>	a he-goat.
<i>una capra,</i>	a she-goat.
<i>un capretto,</i>	a young goat or kid.
<i>un or una lepre,</i>	a hare.
<i>un cervo,</i>	a hart or stag.
<i>un riccio,</i>	a hedge-hog.
<i>una giovenca,</i>	a heifer.
<i>una cerva,</i>	a hind.
<i>un porco,</i>	a hog.
<i>una mandra di porci,</i>	a hog-herd.
<i>un porcile,</i>	a hog-sty.
<i>un cavallo,</i>	a horse.
<i>un barbero, un corsiero,</i>	a race-horse.
<i>un cavallo da posta,</i>	a post-horse.
<i>un cavallo da vettura,</i>	an hackney-horse.
<i>un cavallo da basto,</i>	a pack-horse.
<i>il nitrito,</i>	the neighing.
<i>un cavallaro,</i>	a horse-keeper.
<i>un palafreniere,</i>	a groom.
<i>un capestro, la cavezza,</i>	} a halter.
<i>il cavezzone,</i>	
<i>un freno, una briglia,</i>	a bridle or bit.
<i>un morso,</i>	a sharp-bit.
<i>una sella,</i>	a saddle.
<i>un' agnello,</i>	a lamb.
<i>un leopardo,</i>	a leopard.
<i>un leone,</i>	a lion.
<i>una leonessa,</i>	a lioness.

<i>una cavalla,</i>	a mare.
<i>una martora,</i>	a martin or sable.
<i>un can mastino,</i>	a mastiff.
<i>una talpa,</i>	a mole.
<i>un topo or sorcio,</i>	a mouse.
<i>un topo,</i>	a rat.
<i>una trappola,</i>	a mouse-trap.
<i>un mulo,</i>	a mule.
<i>una musoliera,</i>	a muzzle.
<i>un' animale bastardo,</i>	a mongrel.
<i>un ronzino,</i>	a nag.
<i>un giannetto,</i>	an ambling-nag.
<i>una lontra,</i>	an otter.
<i>un lince or lupocerviero,</i>	an ounce.
<i>un bue or una vacca,</i>	an ox or cow.
<i>una pantera,</i>	a panther.
<i>un porchetto or porcellino,</i>	a pig.
<i>una faina,</i>	a pole-cat.
<i>un porcospino,</i>	a porcupine.
<i>un cervo giovane,</i>	a pricket.
<i>un montone,</i>	a ram.
<i>un cervetto or cervetta,</i>	a roe.
<i>una pecora,</i>	a sheep.
<i>un' ovile,</i>	a sheepfold.
<i>un pastore,</i>	a shepherd.
<i>un pastorale,</i>	a shepherd's crook.
<i>una troja,</i>	a sow.
<i>uno scojattolo,</i>	a squirrel.
<i>uno stallone,</i>	a stallion.
<i>una testuggine,</i>	a tortoise.
<i>una tigre,</i>	a tiger.
<i>una donnola,</i>	a weasel.
<i>un mannerino,</i>	a wether.
<i>un lupo,</i>	a wolf.

Degli

Degli Uccelli.

Of Birds.

<i>Un rostro, il becco,</i>	{	A bird's bill or beak.
<i>la cresta,</i>		the comb or crest.
<i>la barba del gallo,</i>	{	a cock's-gill or wattle, or
<i>l'ala,</i>		a cock's-beard.
<i>il gozzo,</i>		the wing.
<i>il groppone, la groppa,</i>		the craw or crop.
<i>l'artiglio, la branca,</i>		the rump.
<i>una piuma,</i>		the claws or talions.
<i>una penna,</i>		a feather.
<i>la calugine or peluria,</i>		a hard feather.
<i>uno sperone,</i>		down.
<i>un nido,</i>		a spur.
<i>un' uovo,</i>		a nest.
<i>il tuorlo,</i>		an egg.
<i>la chiara,</i>		the yolk of an egg.
<i>un guscio,</i>		the white of an egg.
<i>il germoglio dell' uovo,</i>	{	an egg-shell.
<i>il vischio, la pania,</i>		the strain or cicatricula of
<i>la gabbia,</i>		an egg.
<i>la rete,</i>		bird-lime.
		a cage.
		a net.

I nomi degli Uccelli.

Of the names of Birds.

<i>Un pipistrello,</i>	A bat.
<i>un beccafico,</i>	a fig-pecker.
<i>un merlo,</i>	a black bird.
<i>un codirosso,</i>	a bulfinch.
<i>un' ottarda or assiuolo,</i>	a bustard.
<i>un' abuzzago or buzzago,</i>	a buzzard.
<i>un cappone,</i>	a capon.
<i>un fringuello,</i>	a chaffinch.
<i>un pollastro,</i>	a chicken.

<i>un gallo,</i>	a cock.
<i>una solaga,</i>	a coot.
<i>uno smergo, un marangone,</i>	a cormorant.
<i>una grù,</i>	a crane.
<i>una cornacchia,</i>	a crow or rook.
<i>un cuculo,</i>	a cuckow.
<i>un mergo,</i>	a didapper or dobchick.
<i>una colomba, un colombo,</i>	a dove.
<i>un piccione,</i>	pigeon.
<i>una tortora, una tortorella,</i>	a turtle-tove.
<i>un colombaccio,</i>	{ a ring-dove, a wood-
<i>una colombaja,</i>	pigeon.
<i>un' anitra,</i>	a dove-house.
<i>un' aquila,</i>	a duck or a drake.
<i>un falcone,</i>	an eagle.
<i>un francolino,</i>	a falcon.
<i>un cardellino,</i>	a francoline.
<i>un' oca, un papero, una</i>	a goldfinch.
<i> papera,</i>	{ a goose.
<i>un calenzuolo,</i>	a greenfinch.
<i>un grifone,</i>	a griffin.
<i>un gabbiano,</i>	a gull.
<i>uno sparviere,</i>	a hawk.
<i>un forasiepe,</i>	a hedge-sparrow.
<i>una gallina,</i>	a hen.
<i>un' agbirone,</i>	a heron.
<i>un' upupa, una bubbola,</i>	a hoop or hoopo.
<i>una gazza,</i>	a jackdaw or chough.
<i>una ghiandaja,</i>	a jay.
<i>un' acertello, un gbeppio,</i>	a kestrel.
<i>un' alcione,</i>	a king's-fisher.
<i>un nibbio,</i>	a kite or glead.
<i>una pe ...</i>	a lapwing.
<i>una lodola,</i>	a lark.
<i>una rondinella,</i>	a martin, a swallow.
<i>un rusignolo,</i>	a nightingale.
<i>un gufo,</i>	a night-raven.

<i>uno struzzo,</i>	<i>an ostrich.</i>
<i>una civetta,</i>	<i>an owl.</i>
<i>un barbagianni,</i>	<i>a screech-owl.</i>
<i>un pappagallo,</i>	<i>a parrot.</i>
<i>una pernice,</i>	<i>a partridge.</i>
<i>un pavone,</i>	<i>a peacock.</i>
<i>un pellicano,</i>	<i>a pellican.</i>
<i>un fagiano,</i>	<i>a pheasant.</i>
<i>una fenice,</i>	<i>a phoenix.</i>
<i>una gazza,</i>	<i>a magpie.</i>
<i>un piviere,</i>	<i>a plover.</i>
<i>un pollo,</i>	<i>a pullet.</i>
<i>una quaglia,</i>	<i>a quail.</i>
<i>un corvo,</i>	<i>a raven.</i>
<i>un pettirosso,</i>	<i>a robin-red-breast.</i>
<i>un beccaccino,</i>	<i>a snipe.</i>
<i>una passera, un passero,</i>	<i>a sparrow.</i>
<i>uno storno, uno stornello,</i>	<i>a starling.</i>
<i>una cicogna,</i>	<i>a stork.</i>
<i>una rondine,</i>	<i>a swallow.</i>
<i>un cigno,</i>	<i>a swan.</i>
<i>una farchetola,</i>	<i>a teal.</i>
<i>un tordo,</i>	<i>a thrush.</i>
<i>una coditremola,</i>	<i>a titmouse.</i>
<i>un gallo d' India, un gal- } linaccio.</i>	<i>a turkey.</i>
<i>un' avvoltojo,</i>	<i>a vulture.</i>
<i>una cutrettola,</i>	<i>a wagtail.</i>
<i>una beccaccia,</i>	<i>a woodcock.</i>
<i>un picchio,</i>	<i>a wood-pecker.</i>
<i>un lui, il re degli uccelli,</i>	<i>a wren.</i>

De' Pesci.

Of Fishes.

*Le garze de' pesci,
le pennette, le ale,
le squame, le scaglie,
una conchiglia,*

*The gills of a fish,
the fins.
the scales.
the shell-fish.*

<i>il guscio d' ostriche, e simili,</i>	a shell.
<i>i latti del pesce,</i>	{ the milt or soft roe of a fish.
<i>l' uova,</i>	
<i>le branche de' granchi, e simili,</i>	the fry or spawn.
	the claws of crabs and the like.

I Nomi de' Pesci.

The Names of Fishes.

<i>Un' acciuga,</i>	An anchovy.
<i>un barbio,</i>	a barbel.
<i>una laccia,</i>	a blay or bleak.
<i>un carpine,</i>	a bream.
<i>un riccio marino,</i>	a button-fish.
<i>una reina, una carpa,</i>	a carp.
<i>pesce capone,</i>	a chevin or chub.
<i>una cbiocciola,</i>	a cockle.
<i>il merluzzo, il baccalà,</i>	a cod.
<i>un grongo,</i>	a conger.
<i>un granchio,</i>	a crab-fish.
<i>una torpedine,</i>	a cramp-fish.
<i>un gambero d' acqua dolce,</i>	a cray-fish.
<i>una seppia,</i>	a cuttle-fish.
<i>una lasca,</i>	a dace.
<i>un delfino,</i>	a dolphin.
<i>un pesce sanpietro,</i>	a doree.
<i>un' anguilla,</i>	an eel.
<i>una ciriola,</i>	a grig.
<i>pesce passera,</i>	a flounder.
<i>una ranocchia,</i>	a frog.
<i>un' orata,</i>	a guilt-head.
<i>un gbiozzo,</i>	a gudgeon.
<i>un' aringa,</i>	a herring.
<i>un' aringa fumata,</i>	a red-herring.
<i>una lamprada,</i>	a lampray.
<i>il merluzzo salato,</i>	ling.
<i>una locusta, un gambero marino,</i>	{ a lobster.

<i>uno scombroy</i>	a mackarel.
<i>un cefalo,</i>	a mullet.
<i>un musciolo, una tellina,</i>	a muscle.
<i>un' ostrica,</i>	an oyfter.
<i>una perchia,</i>	a perch.
<i>una lumaca di mare,</i>	a periwinkle or wilk.
<i>un luccio,</i>	a pike.
<i>una palamita,</i>	a pilchard.
<i>un porco marino,</i>	a porpoise.
<i>un polpo,</i>	a pourcontrol.
<i>un barbio rosso,</i>	a roach.
<i>una porcelletta,</i>	a ruff.
<i>un salmone,</i>	a salmon.
<i>una conchiglia,</i>	a scallop.
<i>una laccia,</i>	a shad.
<i>un gamberello,</i>	a shrimp.
<i>una linguata or linguattola,</i>	a sole or foal.
<i>una sardina,</i>	a sprat.
<i>uno storione,</i>	a sturgeon.
<i>un pescespada,</i>	a sword-fish.
<i>una tinca,</i>	a tench.
<i>una razza,</i>	a thornback.
<i>un tonno,</i>	a tunny-fish.
<i>un rombo,</i>	a turbut.
<i>una balena,</i>	a whale.
<i>una merla, un nasello,</i>	a whiting.

De' Serpenti.

Of Serpents.

<i>Un vipera,</i>	An adder or viper.
<i>un' aspidè,</i>	an asp.
<i>un basilisco,</i>	a basilisk.
<i>un dragone,</i>	a dragon.
<i>una lucertola,</i>	a lizard.
<i>una salamandra,</i>	a salamander.
<i>uno scorpione,</i>	a scorpion.
<i>una biscia,</i>	a snake.

<i>uno sciame,</i>	a swarm of bees.
<i>la cera,</i>	bee's wax.
<i>uno scarafaggio,</i>	a beetle, a chafer.
<i>lo scarabeo,</i>	the great horn-beetle.
<i>una mosca cavallina,</i>	{ a breeze or gad-fly, or
<i>una farfalla,</i>	{ ox-fly.
<i>una canterella or cantaride,</i>	a butterfly.
<i>una cicala,</i>	{ cantharides or Spanish-
<i>un grillo,</i>	{ fly.
<i>una mosca,</i>	a cigal.
<i>un moscone,</i>	a cricket.
<i>una zanzara,</i>	a fly.
<i>una locusta,</i>	a great fly.
<i>un calabrone,</i>	a gnat.
<i>una vespa,</i>	a locust.
	a hornet.
	a wasp.

I Nomi degli Alberi,
e de' Frutici.

*The Names of Trees and
Shrubs.*

<i>L' ontano,</i>	The alder-tree.
<i>il mandorlo,</i>	the almond-tree.
<i>il melo,</i>	the apple-tree.
<i>l' albicocco,</i>	the apricot-tree.
<i>il frassino,</i>	the ash.
<i>il balsamo,</i>	balm or balsam.
<i>uno spino,</i>	a barberry bush.
<i>l' alloro, il lauro,</i>	the bay-tree.
<i>il faggio,</i>	the beech-tree.
<i>il bosso, il bucco,</i>	the box-tree.
<i>un rovo,</i>	a bramble.
<i>la ginestra,</i>	broom.
<i>il pugnito,</i>	{ butcher's - broom or
<i>il capper,</i>	{ knee-holly.
<i>il cedro,</i>	the caper-tree.
	the citron or cedar-tree.

<i>il ciriegio,</i>	the cherry-tree.
<i>il castagno,</i>	the chefnut-tree.
<i>il limone,</i>	the lemon-tree.
<i>il sughero,</i>	the cork-tree.
<i>il corniolo or la corniola,</i>	{ the cornel-tree or cornelian cherry-tree.
<i>il cotone,</i>	the cotton-tree.
<i>il cipresso,</i>	the cypress-tree.
<i>l'ebano,</i>	ebony.
<i>il sambuco,</i>	elder.
<i>un'olmo,</i>	an elm.
<i>un fico,</i>	a fig-tree.
<i>l'abeto,</i>	the fir-tree.
<i>l'uvaspina,</i>	a gooseberry-bush.
<i>il biancospino,</i>	{ a haw-thorn or withy-thorn.
<i>il nocciuolo,</i>	a hazle-nut-tree.
<i>il frutice, l'arbutto,</i>	heath.
<i>l'oleastro,</i>	holly.
<i>l'elice or l'elce,</i>	the holm-oak.
<i>il caprifoglio, la madre- selva,</i>	{ an honey-suckle.
<i>il carpine,</i>	the hornbeam-tree.
<i>il gelsomino,</i>	jeffamin.
<i>un ginepro,</i>	a juniper-tree.
<i>l'ellera, l'edera,</i>	ivy.
<i>il lauro,</i>	laurel.
<i>il tiglio,</i>	a lime-tree.
<i>la liquirizia, la regolizia,</i>	liquorice.
<i>l'acero,</i>	the maple.
<i>il lentischio,</i>	the mastic-tree.
<i>il nespolo,</i>	the medlar-tree.
<i>il vischio,</i>	mistletoe or misseldine.
<i>il gelfo, il moro,</i>	the mulberry-tree.
<i>la mortella, il mirto,</i>	a myrtle-tree.
<i>una quercia,</i>	an oak.

il rovero, la rovere,
l'ulivo,
un melarancio,
il vimine or vinciglio,
la palma,
il pesco,
il pero,
il pino,
il platano,
il prugno, il susino,
il melagrano, il granato,
il pioppo,
il ligustro, il ruvistico,
il cotogno,
il morideo,
una rosa or un rosajo,
il rosmarino, il ramerino,
la savina,
il sorbo,
il pruno,
la laureola,
un corbezzolo,
il rovocanino,
un sicomoro,
un tamerisco,
il terebinto,
il noce,
l'ebulo,
l'orno,
il salcio, il or la salce,

{ an oak of the hardest
 kind.
 the olive-tree.
 an orange-tree.
 an ozier.
 a palm-tree.
 a peach-tree.
 a pear-tree.
 a pine-tree.
 a plane-tree.
 a plumb-tree.
 a pomegranate-tree.
 a poplar-tree.
 a privet.
 a quince-tree.
 a raspberry-bush.
 a rose or rose-tree.
 rosemary.
 savin.
 a service or fob-tree.
 { a sloe-tree or black-
 thorn.
 spurge-laurel.
 a strawberry.
 sweet-briar.
 a sycamore-tree.
 a tamarisk-tree.
 the turpentine-tree.
 a wallnut-tree.
 wall-work or danewort.
 a wild-ash.
 a willow-tree.

I Nomi delle Frutta.

The Names of Fruits.

Una mela, pl. le mela,
un' albicocca,
una mora di siepe,
una ciriegia, or cerasa,

An apple.
 an apricot.
 a black-berry.
 a cherry.

<i>una castagna,</i>	a chesnut.
<i>un cedro or limone,</i>	a citron or lemon.
<i>l'uva di corinto, la passe-</i>	} currants.
<i>rina,</i>	
<i>un dattero,</i>	a date.
<i>un fico,</i>	a fig.
<i>una nocciuola,</i>	a filberd.
<i>l'uvaspina,</i>	a gooseberry.
<i>una nespola,</i>	a medlar.
<i>una mora, una gelsa,</i>	a mulberry.
<i>una noce,</i>	a walnut.
<i>una nocella,</i>	a nut.
<i>uno schiaccianoci,</i>	a nut-cracker.
<i>un' oliva,</i>	an olive.
<i>un' arancio, una mela-</i>	} an orange.
<i>rancia, un melangolo,</i>	
<i>un persico, una pesca,</i>	a peach.
<i>una pera, pl. le pera,</i>	a pear, pears.
<i>una pina,</i>	a pine-apple.
<i>una susina, or pruna,</i>	a plumb.
<i>una melagrana, un po-</i>	} a pomegranate.
<i>mogranato,</i>	
<i>una melacotogna,</i>	a quince.
<i>una moridea,</i>	a raspberry.
<i>una sorba,</i>	a service-berry.
<i>una fragola or fravola,</i>	a strawberry.

Degli Aromati, e Droghe *Of Spices, and of the most*
più usuali. *common Drugs.*

<i>Le spezierie, le droghe,</i>	} All sorts of spices.
<i>gli aromati,</i>	
<i>la cannella,</i>	cinnamon.
<i>un garofano,</i>	a clove.
<i>il gengiovo, il zenzero,</i>	ginger.
<i>il or la mace,</i>	mace.
<i>la manna,</i>	manna.
<i>il muschio,</i>	musk.
<i>la nocemoscata,</i>	nutmeg.

il pepe,
il Te bu,
il Te verde,
il caffè,
la cioccolata,

pepper.
bohea-tea.
green-tea.
coffee.
chocolate.

De i Metalli e delle Pietre.

Of Metals and of Stones.

Il bronzo,
l'ottone, l'oricalco,
l'orpello,
il rame,
l'oro,
il borrace,
l'argento,
il ferro,
la latta,
il piombo,
una foglia di qualunque }
metallo, }
una miniera,
la ruggine del ferro,
una lamina or lama di }
piombo. }
la saldatura,
l'acciajo,
lo stagno,
il peltro, }

Bell-metal.
brass.
brass-leaves,
copper.
gold.
gold-folder.
silver.
iron.
tin.
lead.

a leaf of any metal.

a mine.

rust of iron.

a sheet of lead.

folder.

steel.

pewter.

{ verdegrease, or the
green rust of copper,
or brass.

allom.

amber.

antimony.

brimstone.

nitre.

orpine or arsenic.

l'allume,
l'ambra,
l'antimonio,
il solfo or zolfo,
il nitro,
l'orpimento or arsenico,

<i>l'argentovivo, il mercurio,</i>	quicksilver.
<i>il minio,</i>	red-lead.
<i>la rubrica, la sinopia,</i>	ruddle or red oker.
<i>il salpietra, salnitro,</i>	saltpetre.
<i>la biacca, la cerassa,</i>	white-lead.
<i>l'ocra,</i>	yellow-oker.
<i>un' agata,</i>	an agate.
<i>l'alabastro,</i>	alabaster.
<i>il corallo,</i>	coral.
<i>una corniola, un sardonico,</i>	a cornelian-stone.
<i>il cristallo,</i>	crystal.
<i>un diamante,</i>	a diamond.
<i>uno smeraldo,</i>	an emerald.
<i>una pietra focaja,</i>	a flint-stone.
<i>il vetro,</i>	glass.
<i>un diaspro,</i>	a jasper.
<i>la pietranera,</i>	jett.
<i>il talco,</i>	ising-glass.
<i>la calamita,</i>	the load-stone.
<i>il marmo,</i>	marble.
<i>una pietruzza,</i>	a pebble-stone.
<i>il carbone fossile, or mino- rale,</i>	} pit-coal.
<i>il gesso,</i>	
<i>una pietra pomice,</i>	plaster.
<i>una cava,</i>	a pumice-stone.
<i>un rubino,</i>	a quarry.
<i>un carbonchio,</i>	a ruby.
<i>una pietra di paragone,</i>	a carbuncle.
	a touch-stone.

**Del Tempo, Mesi dell'
Anno, Giorni della Set-
timana, e Feste.**

*Of Time, Months of the
Year, Days of the Week,
and Holy-days.*

**IL tempo,
un secolo,
olimpiade,**

Time.
an age.
{ the space of four years,
} olimpiad.

<i>un lustro,</i>	the space of five years.
<i>un' anno, un' annata,</i>	a year.
<i>una stagione,</i>	a season.
<i>la primavera,</i>	the spring.
<i>la state, l'estate,</i>	the summer.
<i>l'autunno,</i>	the autumn.
<i>l'inverno,</i>	the winter.
<i>un mese,</i>	a month.
<i>gennajo,</i>	January.
<i> febbrajo,</i>	February.
<i>marzo,</i>	March.
<i>aprile,</i>	April.
<i>maggio,</i>	May.
<i>giugno,</i>	June.
<i>luglio,</i>	July.
<i>agosto,</i>	August.
<i>settembre,</i>	September.
<i>ottobre,</i>	October.
<i>novembre,</i>	November.
<i>dicembre,</i>	December.
<i>il primo del mese,</i>	the first day of the month.
<i>una settimana,</i>	a week.
<i>un giorno, un dì,</i>	a day.
<i>domenica,</i>	Sunday.
<i>lunedì,</i>	Monday.
<i>martedì,</i>	Tuesday.
<i>mercordì,</i>	Wednesday.
<i>giovedì,</i>	Thursday.
<i>venerdì,</i>	Friday.
<i>sabato,</i>	Saturday.
<i>un giorno di festa,</i>	a holy-day.
<i>un giorno di lavoro,</i>	a working-day.
<i>una mezza festa,</i>	an half holy-day.
<i>il natale,</i>	Christmas.
<i>il capo d' anno,</i>	New-year's-day.
<i>la pasqua,</i>	Easter.
<i>la pentecoste,</i>	Whitsuntide.
<i>il giorno del battesimo,</i>	a christening-day.

<i>il giorno natalizio,</i>	a birth-day.
<i>un giorno infausto,</i>	an unlucky day.
<i>un giorno curiale,</i>	a pleading-day.
<i>un giorno feriato,</i>	{ a day on which there is no pleading.
<i>una giornata intiera,</i>	a whole day.
<i>l'alba, lo spuntar del giorno,</i>	} the break of day.
<i>il levar del sole,</i>	the sun-rising.
<i>la mattina, il mattino,</i>	the morning.
<i>il mezzodì,</i>	noon.
<i>il dopo desinare, il dopo- pranzo,</i>	} the afternoon.
<i>la sera,</i>	the evening.
<i>l'imbrunir della sera,</i>	the dusk of the evening.
<i>il tramontar del sole,</i>	the sun-setting.
<i>la notte,</i>	the night.
<i>la mezza notte,</i>	midnight.
<i>il cantar del gallo,</i>	cock-crowing.
<i>un' ora,</i>	an hour.
<i>mezz' ora,</i>	half an hour.
<i>un' ora e mezza,</i>	an hour and a half.
<i>tre quarti d' ora,</i>	three quarters of an hour.
<i>un minuto,</i>	a minute.
<i>un momento, un' attimo,</i>	a moment.

Dei Stati, e Paesi.

Of States and Countries.

<i>Uno stato,</i>	A state.
<i>un paese,</i>	a country.
<i>un' imperio,</i>	an empire.
<i>un regno,</i>	a kingdom.
<i>una repubblica,</i>	a republic.
<i>una provincia,</i>	a province.
<i>un contado,</i>	{ a county.
<i>una contea,</i>	
<i>un principato,</i>	a principality.

<i>un ducato,</i>	a dutchy.
<i>un marchefato,</i>	a marquisate.
<i>una baronia,</i>	a barony.
<i>un territorio,</i>	a territory.
<i>un' arcivefcovato,</i>	an arch-bifhoprick.
<i>un vefcovato,</i>	a bifhoprick.
<i>una diocefi,</i>	a diocefs.
<i>un' ifola,</i>	an ifland.
<i>un continente,</i>	a continent.
<i>un promontorio,</i>	a promontory.
<i>l' Europa,</i>	Europe.
<i>l' Afia,</i>	Afia.
<i>l' Africa,</i>	Africa.
<i>l' America,</i>	America.
<i>l' Inghilterra,</i>	England.
<i>la Francia,</i>	France.
<i>la Spagna,</i>	Spain.
<i>Portugallo,</i>	Portugal.
<i>la Scozia,</i>	Scotland.
<i>l' Irlanda,</i>	Ireland.
<i>l' Olanda,</i>	Holland.
<i>la Fiandra,</i>	Flanders.
<i>l' Alemagna,</i>	Germany.
<i>la Germania,</i>	
<i>la Boemia,</i>	Bohemia.
<i>la Pruffia,</i>	Pruffia.
<i>Brandeburgo,</i>	Brandenburg.
<i>l' Ungaria,</i>	Hungary.
<i>la Polonia,</i>	Poland.
<i>la Svezia,</i>	Sweden.
<i>la Danimarca,</i>	Denmark.
<i>la Norvegia,</i>	Norway.
<i>gli Svizzeri,</i>	Switzerland.
<i>la Savoia,</i>	Savoy.
<i>il Piemonte,</i>	Piedmont.
<i>l' Italia,</i>	Italy.
<i>la Tofcana,</i>	Tufcany.

<i>il regno di Napoli,</i>	the kingdom of Naples.
<i>la Sicilia,</i>	Sicily.
<i>la Moscovia,</i>	Muscovy.
<i>la Turchia,</i>	Turkey.
<i>la Grecia,</i>	Greece.
<i>la Persia,</i>	Persia.
<i>la Sassonia,</i>	Saxony.

Delle Nazioni.

Of Nations.

<i>Un' Europeo,</i>	An European.
<i>un' Asiatico,</i>	an Asiatic.
<i>un' Africano,</i>	an African.
<i>un' Americano,</i>	an American.
<i>un' Inglese,</i>	an Englishman.
<i>un Francese,</i>	a Frenchman.
<i>uno Spagnuolo,</i>	a Spaniard.
<i>un Portugheze,</i>	a Portugeeze.
<i>uno Scozzese,</i>	a Scotchman.
<i>un' Irlandese,</i>	an Irishman.
<i>un' Olandese,</i>	a Dutchman.
<i>un Fiamingo,</i>	a Fleming.
<i>un' Alemanno, }</i>	a German.
<i>un Tedesco, }</i>	
<i>un Boemo,</i>	a Bohemian.
<i>un Sassone,</i>	a Saxon.
<i>un Brandeburgheze,</i>	a Brandenburgher.
<i>un' Ungaro,</i>	an Hungarian.
<i>un Polacco,</i>	a Polander.
<i>uno Svezzeze,</i>	a Swede.
<i>un Danese,</i>	a Dane or Danish.
<i>uno Svizzero,</i>	a Switzer.
<i>un Savojardo,</i>	a Savoyard.
<i>un Piemontese,</i>	a Piedmontese.
<i>un' Italiano,</i>	an Italian.
<i>un Toscano,</i>	a Tuscan.
<i>un Napolitano,</i>	a Neapolitan.

<i>un Siciliano,</i>	<i>a Sicilian.</i>
<i>un Moscovita,</i>	<i>a Muscovite.</i>
<i>un Greco,</i>	<i>a Grecian.</i>
<i>un Persiano,</i>	<i>a Persian.</i>
<i>un Maltese,</i>	<i>a Maltese.</i>

Alcune Città principali.

Some principal Cities.

<i>Londra,</i>	<i>London.</i>
<i>Parigi,</i>	<i>Paris.</i>
<i>Madrid,</i>	<i>Madrid.</i>
<i>Lisbona,</i>	<i>Lisbon.</i>
<i>Edimburgo,</i>	<i>Edinburgh.</i>
<i>Dublino,</i>	<i>Dublin.</i>
<i>Amsterdam,</i>	<i>Amsterdam.</i>
<i>Brusselles,</i>	<i>Brussels.</i>
<i>Vienna,</i>	<i>Vienna.</i>
<i>Praga,</i>	<i>Prague.</i>
<i>Berlino,</i>	<i>Berlin.</i>
<i>Presburgo,</i>	<i>Presburgh.</i>
<i>Buda,</i>	<i>Buda.</i>
<i>Dresden,</i>	<i>Dresden.</i>
<i>Versaglia,</i>	<i>Warsaw.</i>
<i>Stoccolma,</i>	<i>Stockholm.</i>
<i>Compenague,</i>	<i>Copenhagen.</i>
<i>Berna,</i>	<i>Bern.</i>
<i>Ciamperi,</i>	<i>Chambery.</i>
<i>Ciamberino,</i>	
<i>Roma,</i>	<i>Rome.</i>
<i>Turino,</i>	<i>Turin.</i>
<i>Milano,</i>	<i>Milan.</i>
<i>Padua,</i>	<i>Padua.</i>
<i>Padova,</i>	
<i>Pavia,</i>	<i>Pavia.</i>
<i>Siena,</i>	<i>Siena.</i>
<i>Genoa,</i>	<i>Genoa.</i>
<i>Fiorenza,</i>	<i>Florence.</i>

Livorno, }
Ligorno, }
Napoli,
Venezia,
Palermo,
Messina,
Malta,
Mosco,
Costantinopoli,
Atene,
Iszaam,
Aleppo,
Tunisi,
Algieri,
Tripoli,
Alessandria,

Leghorn.

Naples.

Venice.

Palermo.

Messina.

Malta.

Moscow.

Constantinople.

Athens.

Ispahan.

Aleppo.

Tunis.

Algiers.

Tripoli.

Alexandria.

Le Deità de' Gentili.

The Gods of the Heathens.

Cielo, il più antico degli Dei,

Heaven, the ancientest of the Gods.

il Dio del Tempo, Saturno,

the God of Time, Saturn.

—del Cielo e della Terra, Giove,

— of Heaven and Earth, Jupiter.

—del Mare, Nettuno,

— of the Sea, Neptune,

—dell' Inferno, e delle

— of Hell, and Riches,

Ricchezze, Plutone,

Pluto.

— della Poesia, della Mo-

— of Poetry, Physic,

dicina, e degli Oracoli,

and Divination, Apol-

Apollo,

lo.

—del Sole, Febo,

— of the Sun, Phoebus.

—del Vino, Bacco,

— of Wine, Bacchus.

—dell' Eloquenza, Mer-

— of Eloquence, Mer-

curio,

cury.

—della Guerra, Marte,

— of War, Mars.

—del Fuoco, e Fabbro,

— of Fire, and the

degli Dei, Vulcano,

Smith of the Gods,

Vulcan.

<i>il Dio della Medicina</i> , Esculapio,	the God of Physick, <i>Esculapius</i> .
— <i>dei Venti</i> , Eolo,	— of Winds, <i>Eolus</i> .
— <i>dell' Amore</i> , Cupido,	— of Love, <i>Cupid</i> .
<i>de' Naviganti</i> , Castore e Polluce,	the Gods of Mariners, <i>Castor and Pollux</i> .
<i>il Dio della Compagna</i> , Fauno,	the God of Countrymen, <i>Faunus</i> .
— <i>delle Selve</i> , Silvano,	— of Woods, <i>Silvanus</i> ,
— <i>de' Porti Marittimi</i> , Palemone e Portuno,	— of Sea-ports, <i>Palemon</i> .
<i>un Dio Marino</i> , Glauco,	a Sea-God, <i>Glaucus</i> .
— <i>de' Pastori</i> , Pane,	the God of Shepherds, <i>Pan</i> .
— <i>degli Orti</i> , Priapo,	— of Gardens, <i>Priapus</i> .
— <i>degli Ubbriacchi</i> , Sileno,	— of Drunkards, <i>Silenus</i> .
<i>i tre Giudici dell' Inferno</i> , Eaco, Minosse, Radamanto,	the three Judges of Hell, <i>Eacus, Minos, and Rbadamanthus</i> .
<i>una Dea</i> ,	a Goddess.
— <i>del Cielo e della Terra</i> , Moglie e Sorella di Giove, Giunone,	the Goddess of Heaven and Earth, <i>Jupiter's Wife and Sister, Juno</i> .
— <i>dell' Inferno</i> , Proserpina,	— of Hell, <i>Proserpine</i> .
— <i>del Mare</i> , Teti,	— of the Sea, <i>Tethys</i> .
<i>le Dee de' Monti</i> le Oreadi	— of Mountains, <i>Oreades</i> .
— <i>del Fuoco</i> , Vesta,	— of Fire, <i>Vesta</i> .
— <i>della Caccia</i> , Diana,	— of Hunting, <i>Diana</i> .
— <i>del Mattino</i> , l' Aurora,	— of the Morning, <i>Aurora</i> .
— <i>della Giustizia</i> , Astrea,	— of Justice, <i>Astraea</i> .
— <i>della Guerra</i> , Bellona,	— of War, <i>Bellona</i> .
— <i>delle Biade</i> , Cerere,	— of Corn, <i>Ceres</i> .
— <i>della Gioventù</i> , Ebe,	— of Youth, <i>Hebe</i> .

<i>una Dea delle Partorenti,</i>	the Goddess of Child-
<i>Lucina,</i>	birth, <i>Lucina.</i>
<i>— delle Arti, Minerva,</i>	<i>— of Arts, Minerva.</i>
<i>— della Vandetta, Nem-</i>	<i>— of Revenge, Neme-</i>
<i>mesi,</i>	<i>sis.</i>
<i>— delle Arme, Pallade,</i>	<i>— of Arms, Pallas.</i>
<i>— della Persuasiva, Sua-</i>	<i>— of Persuasion, Sua-</i>
<i>dela,</i>	<i>dela,</i>
<i>— dell' Amore, e della</i>	<i>— of Love and Beauty,</i>
<i>Bellezza, Venere,</i>	<i>Venus.</i>
<i>le Dee degli Alberi, le Di-</i>	the Goddesses of Trees,
<i>radi,</i>	<i>Dryades.</i>
<i>Ninfe che nascono e muo-</i>	Nymphs that are born
<i>jono con gli Alberi, A-</i>	and die with Trees,
<i>madriadi,</i>	<i>Hamadryades.</i>
<i>le Dee de' Fiumi, e de'</i>	the Goddesses of Rivers
<i>Fonti, le Najadi,</i>	and Fountains, <i>Naiades.</i>
<i>le Ninfe del Mare, Ne-</i>	the Nymphs of the Sea,
<i>reidi,</i>	<i>Nereides.</i>
<i>le tre Grazie, Aglaja, Ta-</i>	the three Graces, <i>Aglaja,</i>
<i>lia, Eufrosina,</i>	<i>Thalia, Euphrosyne.</i>
<i>gli Dei Tutelari, Pe-</i>	the Household or Tutelar
<i>nati,</i>	Gods, <i>Penates.</i>
<i>le Dee della Poesia, le</i>	the Goddesses of Poetry,
<i>Muse,</i>	<i>the Muses.</i>
<i>le tre Furie, Tisifone, Me-</i>	the three Furies, <i>Tisiphone,</i>
<i>gera, Aletto,</i>	<i>Megea, Aleto.</i>
<i>la Dea della Poesia Epica,</i>	the Goddess of Epic Poe-
<i>Clio,</i>	try, <i>Clio.</i>
<i>— della Tragica, Mel-</i>	<i>— of Tragedy, Melpo-</i>
<i>pomene,</i>	<i>mene.</i>
<i>— della Comica, Talia,</i>	<i>— of Comedy, Thalia.</i>
<i>— della Boschereccia,</i>	<i>— of Rural Places, Eu-</i>
<i>Euterpe,</i>	<i>terpe.</i>
<i>— della Lirica, Terfi-</i>	<i>— of Lyric, Terpsi-</i>
<i>core,</i>	<i>chore.</i>
<i>— dell' Amoroſa, Erato,</i>	<i>— of Amours, Erato.</i>
<i>— dell' Eroica, Cal-</i>	the Goddess of Heroic
<i>lioſe,</i>	Poetry, <i>Calliope.</i>

— della *Mimica*, *Polimnia*, — of *Pantomimes*, *Polyhymnia*.
 — della *Celeste*, *Urania*. — of *Heavenly*, *Urania*.

Della *Musica*.Of *Musie*.

<i>La musica,</i>	<i>Musie.</i>
<i>la chiave,</i>	the cleff.
<i>le note,</i>	the notes.
<i>il tempo perfetto,</i>	common-time.
<i>il tempo imperfetto,</i>	imperfect-time.
<i>la tripola,</i>	triple-time.
<i>la battuta,</i>	the measure.
<i>le figure delle note,</i>	the figures of the notes.
<i>una massima,</i>	a large.
<i>una lunga,</i>	a long.
<i>una breve,</i>	a breve.
<i>una semibreve,</i>	a semibreve.
<i>una minima,</i>	a minim.
<i>una semiminima,</i>	a crotchet.
<i>una croma,</i>	a quaver.
<i>una semicroma,</i>	a semiquaver.
<i>una biscroma,</i>	a demisemiquaver.
<i>un punto,</i>	a point.
<i>un diesi,</i>	a sharp.
<i>un bemolle,</i>	a flat.
<i>un bequadro,</i>	a B. natural.
<i>le fermate, una battuta,</i>	
<i>mezza battuta, il sos-</i>	} a rest.
<i>piro, il mezzo sospiro, il</i>	
<i>semisospiro, l'aspiro,</i>	
<i>un' opera,</i>	an opera.
<i>una cantata,</i>	a cantata.
<i>un' arietta,</i>	a song.
<i>un duetto,</i>	a duet.
<i>un terzetto,</i>	a song in three.
<i>un quartetto,</i>	a song in four.
<i>il recitativo,</i>	recitative.
<i>un canone,</i>	a canon.

<i>un madrigale,</i>	a madrigal.
<i>una serenata,</i>	a serenade.
<i>una canzonetta,</i>	a ballad.
<i>un concerto,</i>	a consort.
<i>una suonata, una sinfonia,</i>	a sonata, a symphony.
<i>il patetico, il grave,</i>	pathetic.
<i>un' allegro,</i>	an allegro.
<i>una fuga, un soggetto,</i>	a fugue, a subject.
<i>una gavotta,</i>	a gavott.
<i>una sarabanda,</i>	a sarabrand.
<i>una siciliana,</i>	a sicilian.
<i>un' alemana,</i>	an alemand.
<i>un minuetto,</i>	a minuet.
<i>una giga,</i>	a jig.
<i>una pastorale,</i>	a pastoral.
<i>un' organo,</i>	an organ.
<i>un cembalo,</i>	a harpsicord.
<i>un' arpa,</i>	a harp.
<i>una spinetta,</i>	a spinet.
<i>un salterio,</i>	a psaltery.
<i>un liuto, un arciliuto,</i>	a lute.
<i>una chitarra,</i>	a guitar.
<i>una mandola,</i>	a hand-lute.
<i>il contrabasso,</i>	a great bass-viol.
<i>il violincello,</i>	the bass-viol.
<i>un violino,</i>	a fiddle.
<i>una viola,</i>	a viol.
<i>un fagotto,</i>	a bassoon.
<i>un' obué,</i>	a hautboy.
<i>un flauto,</i>	a flute.
<i>il flauto traversiere,</i>	the German flute.
<i>un flautino,</i>	a flagelet.
<i>uno corno, una cornetta,</i>	a horn.
<i>un corno da caccia,</i>	a French horn.
<i>una piva,</i>	a bag-pipe.
<i>una tromba,</i>	a trumpet.
<i>un trombone,</i>	a bass-trumpet.
<i>un tamburo,</i>	a drum.
<i>un timpano,</i>	a kettle-drum.

A COLLECTION of the most useful

ADJECTIVES.

A <i>Bile, perito, pratico,</i>	Able, skilful.
<i>esperto,</i>	
<i>accidentale, casuale,</i>	accidental.
<i>solo,</i>	alone.
<i>antico,</i>	ancient.
<i>approvato, ratificato,</i>	approved.
<i>obliquo, storto,</i>	awry.
<i>cattivo,</i>	bad.
<i>calvo,</i>	bald.
<i>sterile,</i>	barren.
<i>vile,</i>	base.
<i>amaro,</i>	bitter.
<i>lippo, cisposo,</i>	blear-ey'd.
<i>cieco,</i>	blind.
<i>lesso,</i>	boil'd.
<i>incurvato, piegato,</i>	bowed.
<i>benigno,</i>	bountiful.
<i>brillante, rilucente,</i>	bright or shining.
<i>liberale,</i>	liberal.
<i>calmato, sereno,</i>	calm, fair, serene.
<i>accurato, sollecito,</i>	careful.
<i>casto,</i>	chaste.
<i>allegro, giulivo, lieto,</i>	cheerful.
<i>principale,</i>	chief.
<i>fantastico, fastidioso, fa-</i>	
<i>turnino,</i>	churlish, morose.
<i>netto, pulito,</i>	clean.
<i>chiaro,</i>	clear.

<i>commune,</i>	common.
<i>crudele,</i>	cruel.
<i>avaro, misero,</i>	covetous, miserly.
<i>astuto, destro, malizioso,</i>	crafty.
<i>storto,</i>	crooked.
<i>gobbo,</i>	crook-back'd.
<i>sagace, scaltro,</i>	cunning.
<i>ricciuto,</i>	curled.
<i>cortese, manierofo,</i>	courteous.
<i>lauto,</i>	dainty.
<i>umido,</i>	damp.
<i>fosco, oscuro,</i>	dark.
<i>sordo,</i>	deaf.
<i>caro,</i>	dear.
<i>fondo, profondo,</i>	deep.
<i>giocondo,</i>	delightful.
<i>privo,</i>	deprived.
<i>differente,</i>	different.
<i>diligente,</i>	diligent.
<i>diverso, vario,</i>	diverse, various.
<i>dubbiofo.</i>	doubtful.
<i>secco, asciutto,</i>	dry.
<i>muto, mutolo,</i>	dumb.
<i>succido, sporco,</i>	dirty.
<i>primaticcio,</i>	early ripe.
<i>facile, agevole,</i>	easy, facil.
<i>elegante,</i>	elegant.
<i>eloquente,</i>	eloquent.
<i>vuoto,</i>	empty.
<i>dotato,</i>	endued.
<i>invidiofo, geloso,</i>	envious, jealous.
<i>eguale,</i>	equal.
<i>speciale,</i>	especial.
<i>eterno,</i>	everlasting.

<i>languido, languente,</i>	faint, languid.
<i>bello,</i>	fair, beautiful.
<i>fedele, fido, fidato,</i>	faithful.
<i>falso,</i>	false.
<i>famoso, rinomato, celebre,</i>	famous.
<i>digiuno,</i>	fasting.
<i>grasso,</i>	fat.
<i>fermo, stabile,</i>	firm.
<i>abile, atto,</i>	fit.
<i>sciacciato,</i>	flat.
<i>pazzo, matto, stolto, men- tecatto, folle,</i>	foolish or mad
<i>violento, impetuoso,</i>	forcible.
<i>libero, franco, assoluto,</i>	free.
<i>fresco,</i>	fresh.
<i>fertile, secondo.</i>	fruitful.
<i>avvenente, gentile, gra- zioso, cortese,</i>	gentle.
<i>generoso,</i>	generous.
<i>lieto, allegro, giulivo, gioioso,</i>	glad or joyful.
<i>pietoso, pio, devoto,</i>	godly.
<i>buono,</i>	good.
<i>canuto,</i>	gray-headed.
<i>avido, ingordo, geloso,</i>	greedy.
<i>reo, colpevole,</i>	guilty.
<i>bello, bizzarro,</i>	handsome.
<i>felice, prospero,</i>	happy.
<i>duro,</i>	hard.
<i>difficile,</i>	hard or difficult.
<i>aspro, austero,</i>	harsh or austere.
<i>protervo, ostinato,</i>	haughty or obstinate.
<i>alto,</i>	high or tall.
<i>foco, roco,</i>	hoarse.

<i>concavo,</i>		hollow.
<i>santo, sacro,</i>		holy, sacred.
<i>onesto,</i>		honest.
<i>sobrio,</i>		sober.
<i>onorevole,</i>		honourable.
<i>vaso, smisurato,</i>		huge.
<i>imperfetto, tronco, man-</i>	}	imperfect or maimed.
<i>chevole,</i>		
<i>incostante,</i>		inconstant.
<i>industrioso, laborioso,</i>		industrious, laborious.
<i>ingrato,</i>		ingrateful.
<i>intiero,</i>		intire.
<i>interno,</i>		inward.
<i>giusto,</i>		just.
<i>esperto,</i>		expert.
<i>zoppo,</i>		lame.
<i>largo, amplo, spazioso,</i>		large, ample, broad.
<i>pigro, infingardo, ne-</i>	}	lazy.
<i>ghitoso,</i>		
<i>magro,</i>		lean.
<i>virtuoso, dotto,</i>		learned.
<i>mancino,</i>		left-handed.
<i>leggiere,</i>		light.
<i>simile, somigliante,</i>		like.
<i>arrendevole, pieghevole,</i>		limber.
<i>liquido,</i>		liquid.
<i>piccolo, picciolo, poco,</i>		little.
<i>schifevole, nauseoso,</i>		loathsome.
<i>solitario, solingo, soletto,</i>		lonely.
<i>lungo, prolisso,</i>		long.
<i>lento, sciolto,</i>		loose.
<i>troncata, mezzo,</i>		lopped.
<i>basso,</i>		low.
<i>robusto, vigoroso,</i>		lusty.

<i>malizioso,</i>	malicious.
<i>manifesto, notorio,</i>	manifest.
<i>propizio, favorevole,</i>	favourable.
<i>misericordioso, pietoso,</i>	merciful.
<i>compassionevole,</i>	
<i>mansueto, mite,</i>	mild, meek.
<i>ricordevole, memore,</i>	mindful.
<i>miserabile, meschino, mi- sero,</i>	miserable.
<i>modesto,</i>	modest.
<i>nudo, ignudo,</i>	naked.
<i>stretto, angusto,</i>	narrow.
<i>sporco or succido,</i>	nasty.
<i>cattivo, malvagio, perverso,</i>	naughty or wicked.
<i>pulito, acconcio, vago,</i>	neat, pretty.
<i>necessario,</i>	necessary.
<i>novo, novello,</i>	new.
<i>agile,</i>	nimble.
<i>nobile,</i>	noble.
<i>vecchio, antico,</i>	old.
<i>estrinsecò, esterno,</i>	outward.
<i>smorto, pallido, livido,</i>	pale, black and blue.
<i>perpetuo,</i>	perpetual.
<i>schietto, semplice,</i>	plain.
<i>ameno, giocondo, piacevole,</i>	pleasant.
<i>abbondante, ricco, fertile,</i>	plentiful, rich, fruitful.
<i>povero,</i>	poor.
<i>presente,</i>	present.
<i>galante, grazioso, vezzoso,</i>	pretty.
<i>privato, particolare,</i>	private.
<i>prodigo,</i>	prodigal.
<i>profano,</i>	profane.
<i>profitevole, utile, giovevole,</i>	profitable.

<i>proprio,</i>	proper.
<i>prospero, felice, favorevole,</i>	prosperous.
<i>superbo, orgoglioso,</i>	proud.
<i>publico,</i>	public.
<i>puro,</i>	pure.
<i>presto, sollecito,</i>	quick.
<i>temerario,</i>	rash.
<i>crudo,</i>	raw.
<i>pronto, lesto,</i>	ready.
<i>contumace, ribello, osti-</i>	} stubborn, rebellious, ob-
<i>nato, caparbio,</i>	
<i>risoluto, costante,</i>	resolute, constant.
<i>retto, giusto,</i>	right.
<i>ritto,</i>	up-right.
<i>maturo,</i>	ripe.
<i>arrostito,</i>	roasted.
<i>aspro, scabroso, irsuta,</i>	rough.
<i>rotondo, tondo,</i>	round.
<i>lungo,</i>	long.
<i>rozzo, incivile, ruvido,</i>	} rude, uncivil, rustic.
<i>rustico,</i>	
<i>tristo, mesto, malinconico,</i>	} sad.
<i>dolente, afflitto,</i>	
<i>salato, salso,</i>	salted.
<i>salvatico,</i>	savage.
<i>petulante, arrogante,</i>	saucy.
<i>segreto,</i>	secret.
<i>sicuro,</i>	secure.
<i>severo, rigido, rigoroso,</i>	severe.
<i>vergognoso,</i>	shame-faced.
<i>sfacciato, protervo, ardito,</i>	shameless.
<i>breve, corto,</i>	short.
<i>lisco or lusco,</i>	short-sighted.
<i>accorciato, abbreviato,</i>	shortened.

<i>stridulo,</i>	thrill.
<i>ammalato, infermo,</i>	sick, infirm.
<i>sciagurato,</i>	forry-fellow.
<i>temerario,</i>	saucy-fellow.
<i>semplice,</i>	simple.
<i>molle, morbido,</i>	soft.
<i>solenne,</i>	solemn.
<i>sano, intiero,</i>	sound.
<i>acerbo, agro, acido,</i>	sour.
<i>largo, steso,</i>	spreading.
<i>guercio,</i>	squint-eyed.
<i>tranquillo, quieto, fermo,</i>	still.
<i>puzzolente,</i>	stinking.
<i>chino, curvo,</i>	stooping.
<i>forte, gagliardo,</i>	strong.
<i>sottile,</i>	subtil.
<i>sicuro, certo,</i>	sure.
<i>soave, dolce,</i>	sweet.
<i>veloce, rapido, ratto,</i>	swift.
<i>alto,</i>	tall or high.
<i>tenero,</i>	tender.
<i>terribile,</i>	terrible.
<i>grato,</i>	thankful.
<i>sottile, gracile, smunto,</i>	} thin, slender.
<i>snello, svelto,</i>	
<i>lacero, stracciato,</i>	torn.
<i>perfido, iniquo,</i>	treacherous.
<i>tremante,</i>	trembling.
<i>fastidioso, dispiacevole,</i>	} troublesome.
<i>noioso,</i>	
<i>vero,</i>	true.
<i>vano,</i>	vain.
<i>valoroso, bravo, valente,</i>	valiant.
<i>inabile, incapace,</i>	unable.

<i>insipido,</i>	unfavoury.
<i>vagabondo, errante,</i>	wandering.
<i>lascivo,</i>	wanton, lascivious.
<i>debole, fiacco,</i>	weak.
<i>ricco,</i>	wealthy.
<i>lasso, stanco, stracco,</i>	weary.
<i>bagnato,</i>	wet.
<i>cattivo, perverso, scelerato,</i>	wicked.
<i>salvatico, furastico,</i>	wild.
<i>prudente, saggio, savio,</i>	} wise.
<i>accorto,</i>	
<i>spiritoso, faceto, scherzovole,</i>	witty, facetious.
<i>maraviglioso, mirabile.</i>	wonderful.
<i>logoro or frusto,</i>	worn.
<i>degno,</i>	worthy.



COLLECTION OF FAMILIAR ITALIAN PHRASES

ON

DIFFERENT SUBJECTS.

THE most part of the following Expressions are very polite, and commonly used in company : I have placed them here as an Introduction to the Dialogues and practical part of the Grammar, being both useful and necessary to Beginners. At the same time you may observe in some of them the great difference there is in the English Translation, being impossible to translate literally every Phrase from one Language into another, without losing its beauty and delicacy ; but, however, I have endeavoured to give their proper turn, and have adapted their sense according to their respective Dialects.

To

TO PRAY.

<i>Favorisca</i>		favour me	
<i>La supplico</i>	} <i>sedere,</i> <i>parlare,</i> <i>dirmi, &c.</i>	I beseech	} to sit down. you to speak. to tell me, &c.
<i>Si compiaccia</i>		you	
<i>Si degni</i>		be pleased	
<i>Faccia grazia</i>		be so kind	
<i>La prego</i>		I pray you	
<i>Velo domando in grazia,</i>		I beg it as a favour.	
<i>Caro Signore, fatemi, questo</i>		dear Sir do me this fa-	
<i>favore or piacere,</i>		vour.	
<i>Cara Signora fatemi questa</i>		dear Madam or Miss do	
<i>grazia,</i>		me this kindness.	
<i>melo conceda,</i>	}		} grant it me.
<i>mela conceda,</i>			
<i>Per sua gentilezza,</i>		for your gentility.	
<i>Per sua bontà,</i>		for your goodness.	
<i>Per l'amor che mi porta,</i>	}	for the love, value, or	} esteem you have for me.
<i>Per la stima che fa per me,</i>			
<i>Per la sua affezione or</i>		for your affection or be-	
<i>benevolenza,</i>		nevolence.	

OF LOVE.

<i>Mio caro,</i>	}	my dear.
<i>Mia cara,</i>		
<i>Vita mia,</i>		my life.
<i>Anima mia,</i>		my soul.
<i>Amor mio,</i>		my love.
<i>Tesor mio,</i>		my treasure.
<i>Gioja mia,</i>		my jewel or my precious.
<i>Ben mio,</i>		my darling.
<i>Caro voi,</i>	}	dear you.
<i>Cara voi,</i>		
<i>Anima del mio cuore,</i>		soul of my heart.
<i>Vita dell' anima mia,</i>		life of my soul.
<i>Fiamma dell' amor mio,</i>		flame of my love.

Cuor dell' anima mia, heart of my soul.

Cuor della mia vita, } heart of my life.
 } my dear heart.

Vita del mio cuore, life of my heart.

To shew Civility either in meeting with, or parting from a Person.

Signor la reverisco,

Servitor padron mio,

Servitor sua mio Signore,

Schiavo suo,

Servo suo,

} your servant Sir.

Umilissimo servo suo,

Padron mio riverito,

Padron mio stimatissimo,

Padron mio riveritissimo,

Padron mio sempre stimatissimo,

} your most humble
 servant Sir.

The above Phrases may be used either in meeting or parting, but the following only at parting from a Person.

Ad or all' onor di reverirla, } I hope to have the honour to pay my respects to you at another time.

Ad or all' onor di rivederla, I hope to have the honour to see you again.

Baccio le mani di V. S. I kiss your hands Sir or Madam.

A Dio Signore, farewell Sir, adieu Sir or God be with you Sir.

A Dio Signor N. N. farewell Mr N. N. or God be with you Mr N. N.

To thank and compliment.

Vi or la ringrazio, I thank you.

Le sono obligato, I am obliged to you.

Le rendo grazie, I return you thanks.

*Le rendo mille grazie, } I return you a thou-
La ringrazio infinitamente, } sand or infinite thanks.*

Le sono infinitamente obligato, I am extremely obliged to you.

Obligatissimo sempre mio signore, I am always much obliged to you.

Son servo suo, I am your servant.

Son tutto vostro, I am wholly yours.

Mi comandi, command me.

Faccia capitale della mia persona, rely upon me.

M'onori or mi favorisca de' suoi comandi, honour me, or favour me with your commands.

Lei non ha altro che comandare, you need not but to command.

Ha V. S. qualche cosa a comandarmi? have you any commands for me?

V. S. mi fa tropp' onore, you do me too much honour.

V. S. mi favorisce molto, you favour me very much.

V. S. è molto cortese, you are very kind.

molt' obligante, very obliging.

molto civile, very civil.

molto pulito, very polite.

molto gentile, very genteel.

*V. S. la fa } da un vero signore, you do it { as a true gen-
V. S. si diporta } da quel ch'è, you behave { tleman or like
V. S. opera } da un par suo, you act { what you are.*

Non più complimenti la supplico, no more compliments, I pray you.

Lasciamo da banda tante cerimonie, let us lay aside so many ceremonies.

To complain, hope and despair.

Guai a me! woe be to me! or woe is me!

Povero me!

Poveretto me!

Misero me!

Meschino me!

} poor miserable wretch that I am!

Poveri noi! poor miserable creatures that we are!

Sventurato, disgraziato, infelice or sciagurato me!
how unfortunate am I!

Oh Dio che dura pena! O God, what sad pain!

Abi sorte maledetta! ah cursed fortune!

Abi sorte tiranna! ah tyrant fortune!

Abi sorte crudele! ah cruel fortune!

Abi barbara sorte! ah barbarous fortune!

A che siam ridotti! to what are we reduced!

A che siam giunti! to what are we come to or arrived!

A che siam condotti! to what are we brought to!

Siamo morti or spediti! we are undone!

Siam rovinati! we are ruined!

E peccato veramente, it is pity, indeed.

Questo ci mancava, there wanted only that.

Ci siam pur giunti, we are at last come to it.

Ecco dove mi doleva, 'tis that occasioned my grief.

Ecco l'ultima nostra rovina, that's what compleats our ruin.

Quest'è 'l male, that is the misfortune.

Oh poveretto or povero figliolo! oh poor thing or poor child!

Sono il più disgraziato nel mondo, I am the most unfortunate in the world.

Il più infelice, the most unhappy.

Il più sventurato, the most unlucky.

Non so che fare! I know not what to do!

Non so che dire! I know not what to say!

Non ne posso far di meno, } I can't help it.

Non posso rimediarci,

Come potev' io rimediarci! how could I help it!

Bisogna aver pazienza, I must have patience.

Bisogna uniformarmi alla volontà di Dio, I must conform myself to the will of God.

Non si può far altro, nothing else can be done.

Forz' è che celo beviamo, we must swallow it.

Spero in Dio, spero nel Cielo, I hope in God, I hope in Heaven.

Tokens of Affirmation, Consent and Denial.

E vero, } it is true.

Egli è vero,

E vero?

E egli vero? } is it true?

Non è vero,

Egli non è vero, } is it not true.

E verissimo or molto vero, it is very true.

E troppo vero, it is too true.

E così or così è, it is so.

Così è? is it so?

In fatti è così, really it is so.

Si veramente, yes indeed.

Si in verità, yes truly.

Si realmente, yes really.

Non v'è dubbio, there is no doubt of it.

Chi ne dubita? who doubts it?

A dirvi 'l vero,
A dirvi la verità, } to tell you the truth.

Vi credo, I believe you.

Vi si può credere, one may believe you.

Lo credo, I believe it.

Credo così, } I believe so.

Credo di sì, }

Credo di no, I believe not.

Scommetto di sì, I lay it is.

Scommetto di no, I lay it is not.

Scommetterei qualunque cosa, I could lay any thing.

Penso così, I think so.

Non penso così, I do not think so.

Salvo il vero, not to lie, or let truth take place.

E tutt'uno, it is all one.

E la medesima or stessa cosa, it is the same thing.

Così, questo or quello non va bene, so, or that will
 not do.

Mi creda, believe me.

Senza dubbio, without doubt.

Parlo da vero,
Parlo sul serio, } I speak in earnest.

Parlo da senno,
Parlo seriamente, I speak seriously.

E possibile, it is possible,

E possibile? is it possible?

Puol essere, it may be.

Puol essere? can that be?

Non puol essere, that cannot be.

Non voglio, I will not.

In nessun conto,
In nessun modo,
In nessuna maniera,
In conto alcuno,

} by no means.

E una bugia, that is a lie.

E una menzogna, that is an untruth, a story or fib.

V. S. ha indovinato bene, you have guessed right.

Io non ci acconsento, I do not consent to it.

Io son d' accordo, I agree to it.

Non m' oppongo, I am not against it.

To Consult.

Che posso fare? what can I do?

Che si può fare? what can be done?

Che faremo noi? what shall we do?

Che bisogna fare? }

what is to be done?

Che c' è da fare? }

Che partito piglieremo? what course shall we take?

Che remedio v' è? what remedy is there for it?

Che mi consiglia V. S. di fare? what do you advise
 me to do?

Facciamo così, let us do so.

Facciamo una cosa, let us do one thing.

Sarebbe meglio che — it would be better that —

Lasciate fare a me, let me alone.

Vorrei piuttosto — I had rather —

Se fossi in luogo vostro, if I were in your place.

To wish well to a Person.

V' auguro felice a casa, I wish you well home.

V' auguro ogni bene, I wish you every thing that is
 good.

V' auguro del bene,
Le desidero del bene, }

I wish you well.

Ogni contentezza, every thing to your mind.

Ogni felicità, all happiness.

Ogni prosperità, all prosperity.

Ogni allegrezza, all joy.

Iddio v' ajuti, God help you or assist you.

Iddio vi perdoni, God forgive you.

Dio vi benedica, God bless you.

Dio vi salvi or vi guardi, God save you.

Buon prò vi faccia, much good may it do you.

La felicitò, I wish you joy.

To wish Ill.

Ti venga la peste or la rabbia, pox or plague take ye.

Vatti a impicare, go hang yourself.

Che poss' essere impicato, that you may be hang'd.

Ti venga il canchero, mayst thou rot or be rotted.

Che ti si possa rompere il collo, I wish you may break

your neck.

Che sii maledetto or scomunicato, a curse on ye.

Il mal' anno che Dio ti dia, God send thee an ill year.

Che 'l Diavolo ti pigli, may the Devil take ye.

Va al Diavolo, go to the Devil.

Va a casa del Diavolo, go to Hell.

Dio non voglia, God forbid.

To Swear.

Protesto e giuro, I vow and protest.

Vi giuro, I protest to you.

Da Nobile, as I am a Nobleman.

Da Dama, as I am a Lady.

Da Cavaliere, as I am a Cavalier.

Da Gentiluomo, as I am a Gentleman.

Da galantuomo, } as I am an honest man.

D' uomo da bene, }

D' uomo d' onore, as I am a man of honour.

Da quel che sono, for what I am.

Sulla mia parola, upon my word.

Sul mio onore, } upon my honour.

Sull' onor mio, }

In coscienza mia, upon my conscience.

Da pover' uomo, as I am a poor man.

Alla fè, }

A fè di Dio, } upon my faith.

Per mia fè, }

Da Cristiano, as I am a Christian.

Che possa io morire, may I die.

Che possa io essere ammazzato, may I be killed.

Che possa io essere impicato, may I be hanged.

Che possa io crepare, may I burst.

Che 'l Diavolo mi pigli, may the Devil fetch me.

Siami questo veleno, may this be my poison.

Poter di Baccho, }

Cospetto di Baccho, } by Bacchus.

Per Diana, by Diana.

“ Note, That in Italian there are other expressions of swearing generally made use of by the lower class of people, which are equally irre- gular as the vulgar English.”

To Threaten and Insult.

Guàrdati, take you care.

Ti romperò la testa, I shall break your head.

Ti bastonerò, I shall thrash you.

T' ammazzerò, I shall murder you.

Sei morto, you are a dead man.

Ti darò degli schiaffi, I shall box you.

Ti darò dei calci in culo, I shall kick your backside.

Mela pagherai,
Tela farò pagare, } I shall make you pay for it.

Tene farò pentire, I shall make you repent of it.

Se mi farai andare in collera, if you put me in a
 passion.

Non mi stuzzicar le orecchie, don't din my ears.

Non destare il can che dorme, don't rouse a sleeping
 lion.

Guai a te, woe be to thee.

Tu non mi scapperai, you shall not escape me.

Non più parole, taci, no more words, hold your
 tongue.

A vostro dispetto, in spite of you.

Lascia fare a me, let me alone.

T'aggiusterò, I shall do it for you.

To Admire.

Oh Dio! oh God!

Buon Dio! good God!

Caspita! } These five expressions of admiration

Poter di Dio! } cannot be turned into English with-

Poter de Bacco! } out losing their Beauty and Grace,

Poter di Diana! } but the nearest they answer to is,

Poter del Mondo! } Good Lord!

Cbi vidde mai tal cosa! or *cosa simile!* who ever saw

such a thing! or the like!

Cbi avrebbe pensato, creduto, or fatto questa! who

would have thought, believed, or done this!

Che asino! } what a booby! or what a

Che bestia! } foolish fellow!

Che animale! }

Che sciocco! }

Che pazzo or matto! }

Che vincinella! } what a coxcomb.
Che frascone! }

Che peccato! what a pity!

Che bellezza! what a beauty!

Come quel affare! how can that be!

Che maraviglia! what wonder!

Che cosa strana! what strange thing!

Che sorte! } what luck.
Che fortuna! }

Che felicità! what happiness!

To ask Questions.

Come si chiama questo in Italiano? how do you call this in Italian?

Come si dice questa frase in Italiano? how do you say this phrase in Italian?

Che vuol dire — in Italiano? what is the meaning of — in Italian?

Perche non parla V. S.? why don't you speak Sir or Madam?

Come dice V. S.? how do you say Sir?

Che dice V. S.? what do you say Sir?

Che nuova? }

Che novità? } what news?

Che si dice di nuovo? }

Che c'è di nuovo? what is the matter?

Che volete dire? }

Che intendete dire? } what do you mean?

Che ci ha che far questo? what is that to the purpose?

Che vi pare? }

Che pare a V. S.? } what do you think about it?

Che le pare? }

Che cosa è? what is it?

Posso domandarle? may I ask you?

S'è lecito domandarle? if any body can ask you?

A che serve questo? what use is this for?

A ch'è buono questo? what is this good for?

Che v'importa? what is that to you?

Che comanda V. S.? what do you please to have?

Che volete?

Che desiderate? } what do you want? or what do

Che domandate? } you desire?

Cbi volete?

Cbi desiderate? } whom do you ask for? or whom

Che domandate? } do you want?

Quanto tempo fa? how long ago?

In quanto tempo? in how long?

Quanto vale or quanto costa? how much does it cost?

Quanto ne domandate? or *quanto ne volete?* how much

do you ask for it? or what is the price of it?

Quanto lontano? how far is it?

Cbi ve l'ha detto? who told you so?

Quando venite? when will you come?

Quant'anni avete? how old are you?

To shew Joy.

Oh che allegrezza! what joy!

Oh che gusto!

Oh che piacere! } what pleasure!

Oh che soddisfazione! what satisfaction!

Oh che contento è 'l mio! how pleased am I!

Felice me!

Beato me! } how happy am I!

Fortunato me! how lucky am I!

Oh giorno felice! oh happy day!

Mi rallegro,

Mi piace molto, } it pleases me, I have a great deal

Ho gran gusto, } of pleasure, or I am glad.

Mi rallegro sommamente,
 or *infinitamente,* } I am extremely or infi-
Mi piace moltissimo, } nitely glad or delighted.
Ho grandissimo gusto,
Vedervi or vederla, to see you.

To shew Displeasure.

Mi dispiace,
Mi rincresce, } I am sorry or it grieves me.
Mi duole,
M' affligge,
Mi dà pena,
Mi dispiace molto,
Mi rincresce molto, } I am very sorry, or it
Mi duol molto, } gives me a great deal
M' affligge molto, } of grief or trouble.
Mi dà molta pena,
Molto mi dispiace, &c.
Mi dispiace moltissimo, } I am extremely sorry, or it
Moltissimo mi dispiace, &c. } grieves me very much.
Mi dà molto che pensare, it makes me very thought-
 ful, or I am vastly concerned about it.

Mi dà nel cuore, } it pierces my very heart.
Mi trafigge 'l cuore,
Mi dà nell' anima, } that touches my very
Mi dispiace fin' all' anima, } soul.
Mi fa male al cuore, it lies heavy at my heart.
E peccato, it is a pity.
Lo compassiono, I pity him.

To Reproach.

E questa la maniera di trattare? is this the manner
 of your dealing?
Così si tratta con galantuomini? is this dealing with
 honest men?

A questo modo si tratta? do you deal thus?

A questo modo eh? ah is it so?

Non ti doveresti vergognare? oughtest thou not to be ashamed?

Non hai vergogna? are not you ashamed?

A me quest' affronto! to me such an affront as that!

Ad un par mio! } to such a person as I am!

Ad una para mia!

Oh che bella creanza! how civil it is!

Che bel modo di procedere! what a fine way of proceeding!

Che bella maniera! what a fine manner!

Bel modo certo! that is pretty indeed!

Non doveresti usarmi or trattarmi così, you ought not to use me thus.

Tu birbante,
Tu birba,
Tu infame,
Tu furfante,
Tu barone, } thou rogue, scoundrel, or rascal.

Tu vagabondo, thou vagabond.

Tu villano, thou villain.

Tu poltrone, thou coward.

Tu mentitore,
Tu bugiardo, } thou liar.

Tu traditore, thou traitor.

Tu scelerato, thou wicked fellow.

Per usarti alla meglio, to make the best of thee.

Impara pezzo d' asino or bestia per l'avvenire, go learn you sot for the future.

To shew Uneasiness.

Lasciatemi stare,
Mi lasci stare,
Lasciatemi in pace,
Mi lasci in pace, } let me alone, or let me be quiet.

Per l' amor di Dio, for God's sake.

Non mi disturbate,
Non mi molestate,
Non mi rompete la
testa or il capo,
Non m' infastidite, } do not disturb, trouble, tease,
 or vex me.

Andate vi prego, go away I pray.

Andate in buon' ora, go with good omen.

Andate in malora, go with bad omen.

Non mi stordite, don't din or make me giddy.

Andate in pace, go in peace.

Andate con Dio, go and God be with you.

Andate col nome di Dio, go in God's name.

Andate felice, go and be happy.

Levatevi di qua, get you gone from hence.

Andate a fare i fatti vostri, } go about your business.

Andate per i vostri affari, }

Siete molto noioso, you are very troublesome or tiresome.

Fate gli affari vostri or abbiate cura de' vostri affari,
 do you mind your own business.

Non fate rumore, don't make a noise.

To know what is a Clock.

Che ora è? what's a clock?

Sa V. S. che ora è? do you know what's a clock?

Non so, I don't know.

Favorisca vedere 'l suo
orivolo or orologio, } please to look at your watch.

E' quasi mezzo giorno, it is almost noon, or twelve o'clock at noon.

E' quasi mezza notte, it is almost midnight, or twelve o'clock at night.

E' quasi un' ora, it is almost one o'clock.

E' vicino la una, it is about one o'clock.

E' un' ora ed un quarto, it is a quarter after one.

E' un' ora e mezza, it is half an hour after one.

E' un' ora e tre quarti, it is three quarters after one.

Sono due ore, it is two o'clock.

Son due ore sonate or passate, it is past two.

Son due ore le prime, the next that strikes will be two.

Son' incirca due ore, it is about two o'clock.

Son due ore ed un quarto, &c. it is a quarter after two, &c.

E' molto tardi, it is very late.

Più che non pensavo, it is more than I thought.

Il mio orologio va con quello di San Paulo, my watch goes by Saint Paul's.

Il mio orologio va troppo presto, my watch goes too fast.

Il mio orologio s'è fermato, my watch stops.

Il mio orologio non camina, my watch does not go.

Mi son dimenticato darli corda, I forgot to wind it up.

Miscellaneous PHRASES that may be used upon several Occasions.

Vorrei se potessi, I would if I could.

Potrei se volessi, I could if I would.

Volesse Dio ch'io potessi, I wish in God I could.

Varrei poter farlo, I wish I could do it.

Lo farei di tutta cuore, I would do it with all my heart.

Mi par così, it seems so to me.

Penso così, I think so.

Credo così, I believe so.

Credevo or pensavo così, I thought so.

Son di questo parere, I am of this opinion.

In quanto a me, as for my part.

Più che mai, more than ever.

Di lunga maggiore or di molto, by far.

Tanto meglio, so much the better.

Tanto peggio, so much the worse.

Non vale la pena, not worth one's while.

Non importa, it is no matter, or it don't signify.

Che m' importa? what do I care?

Che importa? what signifies it?

Sia come si voglia, let it be as it will.

Son sicuro, I am assured.

V' assicuro, I assure you.

Con tutto ciò, for all that.

Ardisco dire, I dare to say.

Uno fra mille, one in a thousand.

A segno tale, to such a degree or such a pitch.

Al meglio c' ho potuto, in the best manner that I could.

Noi altri Italiani, we Italians.

Voi altri Inglese, you English.

Non faccio conto di voi, I do not value you.

Nonne faccio conto, I do not value it.

Bisogna farlo, must do it.

Ho bisogno di farlo, I want to do it.

Ne ho grandissima voglia, I long for it, or have a very great mind to it.

Favorisca compatirmi or scusarmi, please to excuse me.

Le

Le or vi domando perdono, I beg your pardon.

Mene rido, I laugh at it.

Mene burlo,

Mene fo beffe,

Mene scherzo,

} I scorn it.

Verrò da V. S. or da lei, I will wait upon you.

Non mancherò, I shall not fail.

Non me lo dimenticherò, I shall not forget it.

Procurerò di farlo,

M'ingegnerò di farlo,

} I shall endeavour to do it.

Farò quanta potrò, I will do what I can.

Farò tutto quel che potrò, I will do all that lies in my power.

Desidero poterlo fare, I wish I could do it.

Non posso capirla, I can't comprehend it, or it can't enter into my head.

Mi vien detto, I am told.

Mi fu detto,

M'è stato detto,

} I was told.

Lasciatemi fare, let me do.

Col suo permesso,

Con sua licenza,

} by your leave.

Mi permetta,

Mi dia licenza,

} give me leave or permit me.

Ho da fare,

Ho che fare,

} I am busied or employed.

Son' impegnato, I am engaged.

Si metta il cappello,

Si copra,

} put on your hat.

Non s' incomodi, don't trouble yourself.

Non vi pigliate tanto fastidio, don't take so much trouble.

Fate or faccia presto, make haste.

Servitevi or si serve, help yourself.

Non state molto, don't stay long.

V. S. è benvenuto,

V. S. è benvenuta,

V. S. è 'l padrone,

V. S. è la padrona,

} you are welcome to it.

Per l'affatto, for good and all.

Per qualche tempo, for some time or for a while.

Per un poco, for a little while.

Sene guardi, take care of it.

Guardate quel che fate, take care what you do.

V. S. ha ragione, you are in the right.

V. S. ha torto, you are in the wrong.

V. S. è uomo di parola, you are a man of your word.

Fa bel tempo, it is good weather.

Fa un bel giorno,

E una bella giornata,

} it is a fine day.

Fa vento, it is windy or the wind blows.

Andiamo a spasseggiare,

Andiamo a spasso,

} let us take a walk.

Andiamo a fare un giro, let us go take a turn.

Col decorso del tempo,

A lungo andare,

} in length of time.

V. S. s'inganna, you are mistaken or you deceive yourself.

Non sene prenda fastidio, don't you be uneasy about it.

Verrei che fossi così, I wish it could be so.

Lui è amico di confidenza, he is a trusty friend.

E molto verisimile, 'tis very likely.

Con molta pena, with much ado.

V. S. m'ha mancato, you have disappointed me.

V. S. m' ha mancato di parola, you have not been as good as your word.

Non che io sappia, not that I know of.

Favorisca fare i miei complimenti a, al, alla, alle, &c.
please to give my compliments to, &c.

Mi reverisca il, i, la, le, &c. my service to Mr or Mrs &c.

Porterò le sue grazie, I will carry or give your compliments.

Non mancherò, I shall not fail.

Non sarebbe mal fatto, it would not be amiss.

Sono in grande calamità, I am in great distress.

Non giova il dirlo, it does not signify to tell it.

Lasci ch' io le dica, let me tell you.

Non è mia colpa, it is not my fault.

Non m' incolpate, don't lay the fault on me.

Non occorre, there is no occasion.

Non fa bisogno, there is no need.

Beviamo, let us drink.

Alla salute del Re or del Principe, to the King's or Prince's good health.

Di tutta la famiglia Reale, to all the Royal family.

Alla salute di V. E.

} my Lord or Lady

Alla salute di V. S. illustrissima, }

} to your health.

Signore }

Sir,

Signora }

alla sua salute,

Madam,

} to your health.

Facciamo dei brindisi, let us toast:

Il mio brindisi è la Signora Duchessa, &c. my toast is the Duchess, &c.

Giochiamo alle carte, let us go to cards.

Giochiamo alle carte? shall we go to cards?

Se comanda,
Se si compiace, } if you please.
Se le piace,
Se si degna,
Come comanda, } as you please.
Come le piace,
Quando comanda, when you please.
E tutt' uno per me, it is all one to me.
E tutto lo stesso per me, it is all the same to me.
Sto per dire, I am going to say.
Stavo per dire, I was going to say.
Mancò poco, it wanted little.
Velo manderò a dire, I shall send you word.
Se riesce, if it succeeds.
Supposto che no, suppose not.
E un' uomo di spirito, he is a man of spirit or wit.
Molto faceto or ameno in compagnia, very facetious
 or humorous in company.
Molto curioso, } very comical or full of humour.
Molto ridicolo, }

Note, That with respect to the above words
curioso and *ridicolo*, sometimes in Italian the former
 signifies curious or inquisitive, and the latter ridi-
 culous, viz. a subject to laugh at; but speaking
 of a person who makes the company merry and
 cheerful, both words are well adapted and never
 taken ill by any person.



FAMILIAR DIALOGUES,

ITALIAN and ENGLISH.

DIALOGO PRIMO.

The First Dialogue.

BUON di or buon gi-
orno a V. S.

Good morrow to you Sir,
Madam or Miss.

Buona notte,

good night.

Come sta V. S.?

how do you do Sir?

Come la passa V. S.

well, not very well; so, so.

Bene, non molto bene; così,

very well at your service.

Benissimo per servirla, al
suo servizio or al vostro
servizio,

Le sono obligato or sono
obligato a V. S. le sono
obligata or sono obli-
gata a V. S.

I am obliged to you.

La ringrazio or ringrazio
V. S.

I thank you.

Come sta il signor sua fra-
tello?

how does your brother do?

Sta bene; non molto bene,

he is well; not very well.

Averà gusto di vederla,

She will be very glad to
see you.

Non averò tempo di ve-
derlo oggi.

I shall have no time to see
him to day.

Favorisca sedere or ac-
comodar si.

be pleased to sit down.

<i>Date una sedia al Signore,</i>	{ give a chair to the Gentleman.
<i>Non è necessario,</i>	there's no occasion.
<i>Bisogna che vada a fare</i>	{ I must go make a visit
<i>una visita qui vicino,</i>	{ here hard by.
<i>E molto affrettata V. S.</i>	you are in haste.
<i>Tornerò adess' adesso,</i>	{ I'll be back, or return,
	{ presently.
<i>A Dio Signore,</i>	farewel Sir.
<i>Ho gran gusto di vederla</i>	{ I am glad to see you in
<i>in buona salute,</i>	{ good health.
<i>Baccio le mani a V. S.</i>	I kiss your hand.
<i>Sono servo suo or scbiavo suo</i>	I am your servant.
<i>Umilissimo servo or devo-</i>	{ your most humble servant.
<i>tissimo servo suo,</i>	{
<i>Serva sua,</i>	your servant.
<i>Umilissima serva sua,</i>	your most humble servant.

DIALOGO Secondo.

The second DIALOGUE.

Par fare una Visita la
Mattina.

To make a Visit in the
Morning.

<i>Dov' è 'l tuo padrone?</i>	{ Where is your master?
<i>pronounce dovel,</i>	{
<i>Dorme ancora?</i>	is he asleep still?
<i>Signor no, è svegliato,</i>	no, Sir, he is awake.
<i>E' levato?</i>	is he up?
<i>Non Signore, sta ancora al</i>	{ no, Sir, he is still in bed.
<i>letto,</i>	{
<i>Che vergogna di stare al letto</i>	what a shame it is to be in
<i>a quest' ora?</i>	bed at this time a day?
<i>Feri sera andai al letto</i>	{ I went to bed so late last
<i>tanto tardi, che non</i>	{ night I could not rise
<i>ho potuto levarmi a</i>	{ early this morning.
<i>buonora,</i>	{
<i>Ebbe forse qualche com-</i>	{ had you any company?
<i>pagnia?</i>	{

Si Signore,

yes Sir.

Che si fece qui dopo cena?

{ what did you do after
supper?

Si ballò, si cantò, si rise,

{ we danc'd, we sung, we

si giocò alle carte,

{ laugh'd, we play'd at cards

A che gioco?

{ at what game?

Giocammo a pichetto col

{ we play'd at piquet with

signor Cavaliere,

{ the Knight.

Che fecero gli altri?

{ what did the rest do?

Giocarono a scacchi.

{ they play'd at chess.

Quanto mi dispiace non

{ how vex'd I am I did not

haverlo saputo?

{ know it?

Cbi vinse? cbi perse or

{ who won? who lost?

perdè?

Vinsi or guadagnai dieci

{ I got ten pistoles.

doppie,

Fin a che ora si giocò?

{ how late did you play?

Fin alle due dopo mezza notte,

{ till two in the morning.

Acche ora andò al letto V.S.?

{ at what time did you go
to bed?

Alle tre or alle tre è mezza,

{ at three or half an hour
after three.

Non mi maraviglio che vi

{ then I don't wonder at

leviate così tardi,

{ your rising so late.

Che ora è?

{ what's a clock?

Che ora credete che sia?

{ what a clock do you
think it is?

Credo che non siano ancora

{ I think 'tis not nine yet.

le nove,

Come le nove! sono sonate

{ how! nine! it has struck

le dieci,

{ ten.

Bisogna adunque levarmi,

{ nay then I must rise.

DIALOGO Terzo.

The Third DIALOGUE.

Per vestirsi.

To dress one's self.

- Chi è là? *Who is there?*
 Che comanda V. S. *What will you please to have Sir?*
 Su su, presto fate fuoco. *be quick, make a fire, and*
 e vestitemi. *dress me.*
 C'è fuoco Signore, *there is a fire Sir.*
 Datemi la mia camicia, *give me my shirt.*
 Eccola Signore, *here it is Sir.*
 Non è calda or è fredda, *'tis not warm or 'tis cold:*
 Se V. S. comanda la scaldere, *if you please I'll warm it.*
 No, no, portatemi le mie *no, no, bring me my silk*
 calze di seta, *stockings,*
 Sono rotte, *they have holes in them.*
 Dateci un punto or accom- *stitch them a little or mend*
 modatele, *them.*
 Le ho date alla conciatal- *I have given them to the*
 zotte, *stocking-mender.*
 Avete fatto bene: ove sona- *'tis well done: where are*
 le mie pianelette? *my slippers?*
 Ov'è la mia veste da camera? *where is my night-gown?*
 Pettinatemi, *comb my head.*
 Pigliate un' altro pettine, *take another comb.*
 Datemi 'l mio fazzoletto, *give me my handkerchief.*
 Eccone un bianca Signore, *there's a clean one for you.*
 Datemi quel ch'è nella mia *give me that which is in*
 saccoccia, *my pocket.*
 L'ho dato alla lavandara, *I gave it to the washer-*
 era sporco, *woman, it was foul.*
 Ha portato ella la mia bi- *has she brought my linen?*
 ancheria?
 Signor si non ci manca niente, *yes, there wants nothing.*
 Portate i miei calzoni, *bring my breeches.*

Che vestito metterà V. S. oggi?

*Quel che portai jeri,
Il sartore porterà ben
presto quel di panno,*

Bussano la porta, vedete chi è,

Chi è?

E' 'l sartore,

Fate lo entrare,

DIALOGO Quarto.

Il Gentiluomo e 'l Sartore.

Portate il mio vestito?

Sì Signor, eccolo qui,

Mi fate aspettar molto,

*Non ho potuto venir più
presto,*

Non era finito,

La fodera non era cucita,

*Vuole V. S. provare il
giustacore?*

Vediamo s' è ben fatto,

*Credo che V. S. ne sarà
contenta,*

Mi pare molto lungo,

Si portano lunghi adesso,

Abbottonatemi,

E' troppo stretto,

*Per esser ben fatto, bisogna
che sia ben serrato,*

*Non son le maniche troppo
larghe?*

*{ what suit will you wear
to-day?*

*{ that I wore yesterday.
the taylor will bring your
cloth suit presently.*

*{ a knock at the door,
see who it is.*

{ who is it?

{ it is the taylor.

{ let him come in.

The Fourth DIALOGUE.

The Gentleman and the Taylor.

*{ Do you bring my suit
of cloaths?*

{ yes Sir, here it is.

*{ you make me stay a
great while.*

{ I could not come sooner.

{ it was not finished.

{ the lining was not sew'd.

*{ will you be pleased to try
the close coat on?*

{ let's see if it be well made.

{ I believe it will please you.

{ methinks it is very long.

{ they wear them long now.

{ button me.

{ it is too close.

*{ to be well made, it ought
to be close.*

*{ are not the sleeves too
wide?*

<i>Signor no, stanno benissimo,</i>	no Sir, they fit very well.
<i>I calzoni sono molto stretti,</i>	{ the breeches are very narrow.
<i>E l' usanza or è la moda,</i>	that's the fashion.
<i>Quest' abito sta benissimo a</i>	this suit becomes you
<i>V. S.</i>	mighty well.
<i>E troppo corto, troppo</i>	'tis too short, too long,
<i>lungo, troppo largo,</i>	too big, too little.
<i>troppo stretto,</i>	
<i>V. S. mi perdoni, sta molto</i>	pardon me Sir, it is very
<i>bene,</i>	well.
<i>Che dite del mio fornimento?</i>	{ how do you like my
<i>E bellissimo e ricchissimo,</i>	{ trimming?
<i>Quanto costa il braccio?</i>	'tis very fine and rich.
<i>questo gallone?</i>	what did the lace cost a
<i>L' hò pagato uno scudo,</i>	yard?
<i>Non è troppo, è buon mercato</i>	I paid a crown.
<i>Ov' è 'l resto del mio panno?</i>	{ that's not too much, it
<i>Non v' è niente affatto d'</i>	{ is cheap.
<i>avanzo,</i>	{ where's the rest of my
<i>Avete fatto il vostro conto?</i>	{ cloth?
<i>Signor no, non ho avuto</i>	there's not a bit left,
<i>tempo,</i>	have you made your bill?
<i>Portatelo domani, vi pagherò</i>	no Sir, I had not time.
	{ bring it to-morrow, I
	will pay you.

DIALOGO Quinto.

The Fifth DIALOGUE.

Per mangiare qualche
cosa.

To eat something.

<i>Portateci qualche cosa da</i>	bring us something to
<i>mangiare,</i>	eat.
<i>Signor sì, ecco salsiccie e</i>	yes Sir, there are sausages
<i>pasticcicci, e</i>	and petty-patees.

- Vuol V. S. or volete ch' io } shall I bring the gammon
porti il presciutto? } of bacon?*
- Si, portatelo, ne taglieremo } yes, bring it, we will cut
una fetta, } a slice of it.*
- Mettete una salvietta so- } lay a napkin on this table.
pra questa tavola, }*
- Datemi tandi, coltelli, e } give us plates, knives and
forchette, } forks.*
- Sciacquate i bicchieri, } since the glasses.*
- Date una sedia al Signore, } reach the Gentleman a
 } a chair.*
- V. S. seda, si metta vicino } sit down Sir, sit by the
al fuoco, } fire.*
- Non ho freddo, sarò benis- } I am not cold, I shall be
simo qui, } very well here.*
- Vediamo se 'l vino è buono, } let's see if the wine be
 } good.*
- Datemi quella botteglia e } give me that bottle and a
un bicchiere, } glass.*
- Di grazia, V. S. provi } taste this wine I pray.*
- Che gliene pare? che ne dice? } how do you like it?
 } what do you say to it?*
- Non è cattivo, è squisitissimo, } 'tis not bad, 'tis exceed-
 } ing good.*
- Ecco le salsiccie, levate } here are the sausages, take
questo piatto, } away this plate.*
- V. S. mangi delle salsiccie, } eat some sausages.*
- Ne ho mangiato, sono buo- } I have eat some, they are
nissime, } very good.*
- Datemi a bere, } give me some drink.*
- Alla salute or sanità di V. S. } Sir, to your health.*
- La ringrazio, } Sir, I thank you.*
- * Date a bere al Signore, } give the Gentleman some
 } drink.*
- Ho bevuto adesso, } I drank but just now.*
- I pasticciotti sono buonissimi, } the petty-patees are ex-
 } tremely good.*

Sono un tantino troppa cotti, { they are bak'd a little too much.
V. S. non mangia, { you don't eat.
Ho mangiato abbastanza, { I have eat enough.
V. S. si burla, non ha { you only jest, you have
mangiato niente, { eat nothing.
Ho mangiato benissimo, { I have eat very heartily.

DIALOGO SESTO.

The Sixth Dialogue.

Per parlare Italiano.

To speak Italian.

Come va l'Italiano?

How goes the Italian?

Così, così,

so, so.

Non so quasi niente,

I know nothing almost.

Si dice però che V. S. parla
benissimo,'tis said however you speak
very well.

Voleste Dio che fosse vero,

I wish it were true.

Quei che lo dicono, s'in-
gannano di molto,those that say so are great-
ly mistaken.L'affiduro che m'è stato
detto così,

I assure you I was told so.

Posso dire solamente alcune
parole che so a mente,I can only say a few words
that I know by heart.Questo basta per cominciare
a parlare,that's enough to begin to
speak.

E' molto vero,

it is very true.

Parli V. S. sempre, o bene,
o male,be always speaking, whe-
ther well or ill.

Temo di fare errori,

I fear to commit faults.

Non tema V. S. la lingua
Italiana non è difficile,never fear, the Italian lan-
guage is not hard.E' so e c'ha molte leggia-
drie,I know that, and it has,
abundance of charms.E' vero, e particolarmente
nella bocca d'una Dama,'tis true, and especially in
a Lady's mouth.

O me felice se la sapessi!

{ how happy should I be
if I understood it!

Bisogna studiar per impararla,

{ study is the only way of
learning it.

Quanto tempo è che V. S. impara?

{ how long have you learnt?

Non sono ancora due mesi,

{ scarce two months yet.

Come si chiama il suo maestro?

{ what's your master's
name?

Si chiama il Signor N. N.

{ his name is Mr N. N.

Da molto tempo che lo conosco or è un pezzo che lo conosco,

{ I have known him a great
while,

Ha insegnato a molti amici miei,

{ he has taught several
friends of mine.

Non dice a V. S. che bisogna parlare Italiano?

{ does not he tell you that
you must speak Italian?

Signor sì, me lo dice spesso,

{ yes, he often tells me so.

Perchè adunque non parla?

{ why don't you speak then?

Con chi vuol V. S. ch'io parli?

{ who will you have me
speak with?

Con quei che le parleranno,

{ with those that shall
speak to you.

Vonrei parlar, ma non ardisco,

{ I would fain speak, but
dare not.

Non bisogna temere, bisogna essere ardito,

{ you must not fear, you
must be bold.

DIALOGO Settimo.

The Seventh Dialogue.

*Delle Bellezze d'una
Damigella.*

*Of the Charms of a young
Lady.*

*Ecco una bella Signora
or Dama!*

{ There's a beautiful Lady!

E ben fatta.

{ she's finely shap'd.

E vezzosa, è leggiadra,

{ she's charming, she's handsome.

La conoscete?

do you know her?

Non la conosco,

I don't know her.

Ha begli occhi,

she has lovely eyes.

Non ho mai visto una più bella statura,

I never saw a finer shape.

E disinvolta,

{ she has an easy genteel air.

Ha un' aspetto nobile,

she has a noble air.

Il giro del viso è ammirabile.

the shape of her face is admirable.

Le guancie pienotte, e delicate,

her cheeks plump and delicate.

La bocca piccola, e vermiglia,

her mouth little and red.

Il naso ben fatto,

her nose well made.

Avete osservata la sua carnagione?

have you taken notice of her complexion?

E' l'più bel sangue del mondo,

{ it is the finest in the world.

Una carnagione bianca e vivace,

a complexion fair and lively.

Oh che belle mani ha!

what white hands she has!

Il candore del suo petto, e vermiglio del suo viso

the whiteness of her bosom, and the vermilion

fanno senza dubbio tor-

of her cheeks, shame

to ai gigli, ed alle rose,

the lilies and the roses.

Ha i denti bianchi come la neve,

she has teeth as white as snow.

Camina con belle maniere, or con bel garbo,

she walks agreeably.

Ha una fisionomia spiritosa,

she has a sensible look.

Ha fattezze vaghe,

she has surprizing charms.

E' molto commendata in bellezza,

she's mightily cry'd up for her beauty.

Credo ch'abbia molto spirito.

{ I think she has a great deal of wit.

Ben si può veder la bellezza, ma non lo spirito,

beauty may be seen, but not wit.

Si dice che sia adeguato lo spirito alle sue bellezze,

they say she has as much wit as beauty.

E' adunque un compendio di tutte le perfezzioni,

then she's an epitome of all perfections.

DIALOGO Ottavo.

The Eighth Dialogue.

Per domandar quel che si dice di Nuovo.

To enquire after News.

Che si dice di nuovo?

What news is stirring? do you know any?

Sapete niente di nuovo?

Non ho sentito niente or non ho inteso niente,

I have heard none.

Di che si parla?

what do they say abroad?

Non si parla di niente.

{ there's no talk of any thing.

Avete sentito dire ch'averemo la guerra?

have you heard no talk of war?

Non ne ho inteso parlare,

I heard nothing of it.

Si parla pero d'un' assedio,

{ there's a talk however of a siege.

Si diceva, ma non è vero.

{ there was such a discourse, but there's nothing in it.

Al contrario si parla di pace,

{ on the contrary there's talk of peace.

Credete ch'averemo la pace?

{ do you think we shall have peace?

Credo di sì,

I believe so.

Che si dice in corte?

what say they at court?

Si parla d'un viaggio,

they talk of a voyage.

<i>Quando credete che par-</i> <i>irà il Re?</i>	} when do you think the King will go?
<i>Non si sa, non si dice quando,</i>	{ 'tis not known, they do not say when.
<i>Dove si dice ch' anderà?</i>	} where do they say he'll go?
<i>Chi dice in Fiandra, chi in</i> <i>Germania,</i>	} some say into Flanders, others into Germany.
<i>Che dicono le gazzette su</i> <i>questo?</i>	} what says the news papers about it?
<i>Non le ho lette.</i>	} I have not read them.
<i>E' vero quel che si dice del</i> <i>Signor N.?</i>	} Is it true what was re- ported of Mr N.?
<i>Che cosa di lui?</i>	} what of him?
<i>Si dice che sia ferito mor-</i> <i>talmente,</i>	} they say he is mortally wounded.
<i>Mi dispiacerebbe perch' è</i> <i>un galantuomo,</i>	} I should be sorry for that, he's a galant man.
<i>Chi l' ha ferito?</i>	} who wounded him?
<i>Due furfanti che l' hanno</i> <i>assalito,</i>	} two rogues that set upon him.
<i>Si sa il perche?</i>	} is it known upon what account?
<i>Corre voce che sia per aver</i> <i>dato uno schiaffo ad</i> <i>uno d'essi.</i>	} it is reported he gave one of them a box on the ear.
<i>Non lo credo, nemen' lo.</i>	} I don't believe it, nor I neither.
<i>Comunque si sia, si saprà</i> <i>presto.</i>	} however we shall know the truth quickly.

DIALOGO Nono.

The Ninth DIALOGUE.

Per domandare d' uno.

To enquire after one.

Chi è quel Gentiluomo che vi
parlava poco fa?{ Who is that Gentleman
that spoke to you just
now.

- E un Tedesco,* } he is a German.
- Lo credevo Inglese,* } I took him for an Englishman.
- E della parte di Sassonia,* } he came from about Saxony.
- Parla benissimo Francese,* } he speaks very good French.
- Se ben è Tedesco, parla di maniera Inglese, ch' è creduto Inglese,* } although he is a German he speaks English so well that they believe him an Englishman.
- Parla Francese quanto i Francesi medesimi,* } he speaks French as the Frenchmen themselves.
- Gli Spagnuoli lo stimano Spagnuolo,* } the Spaniards take him for a Spaniard.
- E difficile d'esser, pratico in tante lingue così differenti,* } 'tis difficult to be master of so many different languages.
- È stato un pezzo in quei paesi,* } he has been a great while in those countries.
- E molto che lo conoscete?* } is it long since you knew him?
- Sono due anni in circa,* } it is about two years.
- Ha buon' aria, ha buona ciera,* } he has a noble air, he has a good mien.
- E di bella presenza,* } he makes a handsome figure.
- Non è nè troppo grande, nè troppo piccolo,* } he is neither too tall nor too little.
- E ben fatto, la sua statura è disinvolta,* } he is handsome, his shape is easy and free.
- Suona il liuto, la chitarra, e molti altri strumenti,* } he plays upon the lute, the guitar, and several other instruments.
- Averei a caro di conoscerlo,* } I should be very glad to know him.

Veneprocurerà la conoscenza,

Ove sta di casa?

Sta qui vicino,

*Quando volete che l'an-
diamo a riverire insieme?*

*Ogni volta che or quando
vi piacerà, perche
amico mio intrinseco,*

*Sarà quando vi sarà com-
modo or averete tempo,*

V'anderemo domattina,

Vi resserò obligato,

DIALOGO Decimo.

Per scrivere.

*Datemi un foglio di car-
ta, penna e calamaio,*

*Entrate nel mio cabinet-
to, troverete sopra la
tavola, quanto vi sarà
di bisogno,*

Non vi sono penne,

Eccone tante nel calamaro,

*Non sono buone or non
vagliano niente,*

Eccone altre,

Non sono temperate,

Ov'è'l vostro temperino?

Sapete temperar le penne?

*I will bring you ac-
quainted with him.*

where does he live?

he lives hard by.

when will you have us

*go and wait on him
together?*

*when you please, for he's
my intimate friend.*

*it shall be when you can
spare time.*

*we'll go thither to-mor-
row morning.*

*I shall be extremely o-
bliged to you.*

The Tenth DIALOGUE.

To write.

*Give me a sheet of pa-
per, and pen and ink.*

*step to my closet, you'll
find on the table all you
have occasion for.*

there are no pens.

*there are a great many
in the standish.*

they are good for nothing.

there are some others.

they are not made.

where is your penknife?

can you make pens?

- Le tempero a modo mio,* I make them my own way.
- Mentre finirò questa lettera, favoritemi di fare un piego di quest'altre,* { while I make an end of this letter do me the favour to make a Packet of the rest.
- Che sigillo volete, che segli metta?* { what seal would you have me put to it?
- Sigillatelo colla mia ziffera, or colle mie armi,* { seal it with my cypher or coat of arms.
- Che cera li metterò?* { what wax shall I put to it?
- Della rossa, o della nera, non importa,* { either red or black, no matter which.
- Avete messo la data?* have you put the date?
- Credo di sì, ma non l'ho sottoscritto,* { I believe I have, but I have not sign'd it.
- Ai quanti siamo del mese?* { what day of the month is this?
- Siamo oggi agli otto, ai dieci, ai quindici, ai venti,* { to day is the eighth, the tenth, fifteenth, twentieth.
- Metteteci il soprascritto,* put the superscription.
- Ov'è l'arena?* where is the sand?
- Ven'è nel polverino,* { there's some in the sand-box.
- Ecco 'l vostro servo, volete che porti la lettera alla posta?* { there's your servant, will you let him carry the letters to the Post-House?
- Portate le mie lettere alla posta, e non vi scordate di pagare il porto,* { carry my letters the Post-Office, and don't forget to pay postage.
- Non ho denari, Signore,* I have no money, Sir.
- Pigliate, ecco una doppia,* here, there's a pistole.
- Andate presto, e tornate quanto prima,* go quickly and make haste back.

DIALOGO Undecimo.

The Eleventh Dialogue.

Per comprare.

To buy.

Che brama V. S. or che
cerca?

What do you want, Sir?
what do you lack?

Vorrei un panno bello, e
buono da fare un ve-
stito,

I want a good fine cloth
to make me a suit.

V. S. entri, vedrà qui i
più belli panni di Lon-
dra,

be pleased to walk in,
you'll see the finest in
London.

Mostratemi il migliore
ch' avete,

show me the best you
have.

Eccone un bellissimo, e come
si porta adesso,

there's a very fine one,
and what's worn at
present.

E' buono, ma il color non
mi piace.

'tis good but I don't like
the colour.

Eccone un' altra pezza,
più chiara,

there's another lighter
piece.

Il color mi piace, ma il
panno, non è forte a
bastanza, è troppo sot-
tile,

I like that colour well,
but the cloth is not
strong, 'tis too thin.

Veda V. S. questa pezza;
non ne troverà così bella
altrove,

look upon this piece
here Sir; you'll not
meet with the like any
where else.

A quanto mela venderete
la canna or il braccio?

how will you sell it me an
ell or a yard?

Senza dire, a V. S. più
d'un soldo, ella vale,
&c.

without exacting, 'tis
worth, &c.

*Signore, io non sono av-
vezzo a prezzolare,
ditemi di grazia l'ul-
timo prezzo.*

Sir, I am not used to stand
haggling; pray tell me
your lowest price.

*L'ho detto a V. S. tanto
vale,*

I have told you, Sir, 'tis
worth that.

*E troppo caro, vene darò,
&c.*

'tis too dear, I'll give you,
&c.

*Non v'è un quadrino da
levare,*

I can't bate a farthing.

*Non averete quel ch'
avete domandato,*

you shall not have what
you ask.

*V. S. m'ha domandato
l'ultimo prezzo, gliel'
ho detto,*

you ask'd me the lowest
price, and I have told
you.

*Via, via, tagliatene due
braccia,*

come, come, cut off two
ells of it.

*Le giuro da galantuomo
che non guadagno uno
scudo con lei,*

I protest on the faith
of an honest man I
don't get a crown by
you.

*Ecco quattro doppie, date-
mi 'l resto,*

there's four pistoles, give
me the rest.

*Di grazia V. S. mi dia un'
altra doppia, questa è
scarfa, non è di peso.*

be pleased, Sir, to give
me another pistole for
this, this is too light,
it wants weight.

*Eccone un' altra,
A Dio Signor, son servi-
tor di V. S.*

there's another.
farewel, Sir, your ser-
vant.



DIALOGO Duodecimo.

The Twelfth DIALOGUE.

Per Giocare.

To Play.

*Giociamo una partita a
pichetto?*

Shall we play a game at
piquet?

Quanto volete giocare?

what will you play for?

*Giociamo mezzo scudo
per passar il tempo,*

let's play for half a crown
to pass away the time.

Dateci carte,

give us some cards.

*Vediamo a chi toccherà a
fare.*

let's see who shall deal.

Tocca a voi, tocca a me,

{ you are to deal; I am
to deal.

*Mescolate le carte, tutte
le figure sono insieme,*

shuffle the cards, all the
Court-cards are together.

Sono mescolate a bastanza,

they are shuffled enough.

Alzate Signore,

cut Sir.

Avete le vostre carte?

have you all your cards?

Credo di sì,

I believe I have.

Quanto ne pigliate?

how many do you take?

Piglio tutto. Ne lascio una,

I take all. I leave one.

Ha un cattivo gioco,

I have a bad game.

A monte,

deal again.

Signor no per questa volta,

not this time.

Avete scartato?

have you laid out?

*Signor no, il mio gioco m'
imbarazza,*

no, Sir, my game puzzles
me.

*Dovete aver bel gioco,
poichè non ho niente,*

you must needs have good
cards, for I have nothing.

*Contate il vostro punto,
cinquanta, sessanta, &c.*

tell your point, fifty, sixty,
&c.

Non vagliono, sono buoni,

{ they are not good, they
are good.

*Quinta maggiore, quinta
al Re, quinta bassa,
quarta alla Dama,
terza al Fante,*

a quint major, a quint to a
King, a small quint,
fourteen by Queens, a
tierce to a knave.

*Ne ho altrettanto,
Quattordici di Re, tre
Assi, tre Dame,
Giocate cuori, picche, fiori,
quadri,*

*L' Azzo, il Re, la Dama, il
Fante, il dieci, il nove,
l' otto, il sette,*

*Ho perso, avete fatto un
pico, repico,*

Avete vinto or guadagnato,

Mi dovete mezzo scudo,

Scusatemi, m'elo dovevate,

Siamo pace dunque,

DIALOGO Terzodecimo.

Per il Viaggio.

*Quante miglia sono da
qui a N.?*

Sono otto,

*Non vi potremo arrivare
oggi, e troppo tardi,*

*E incirca mezzo dì, vi
arriverete ancora a
buonora,*

E buona la strada?

*Non troppo, vi sono bos-
chi, e fiumi da passare,*

*V'è pericolo nella strada
reale?*

*Non sene parla, è una
strada maestra, dove si
trova gente ad ogni
momento,*

I have as much.

fourteen by Kings, three
Aces, three Queens:

play hearts, spades, clubs,
diamonds,

the ace, the King, the
Queen, the knave, the
ten, the nine, the eight,
the seven.

I have lost, you made a
peek, a re-peek.

you have won.

you owe me half a crown.

{ you ow'd it me, pardon
me.

we are quits, or even then.

The Thirteenth DIALOGUE.

For a Journey.

How many miles is it
from this place to N.?

'Tis eight.

{ we shall not be able to
reach so far to day, 'tis
too late.

'tis about twelve o'clock,
you'll get thither early
enough yet.

is the way good?

so, so, there are woods
and rivers to pass?

is there any danger upon
the highway?

there's no talk of it, 'tis a
great road, where a man
meets people every mo-
ment.

*Non si dice che vi siano
ladri nei boschi?*

{ don't they say there are
highwaymen in the
woods?

*Non v'è nulla da temere,
né di giorno, né di notte,*

{ there's nothing to be fear'd
either by day or night.

Che strada bisogna pigliare?

{ which way must one take?

*Quando sarete vicino alla
collina vi torrete a man
dritta,*

{ when you come near the
hill you must take to the
right-hand.

*Non bisognerà adunque sa-
lir la collina?*

{ must one not go up the
hill then?

*Signor no, non v'è che un
piccolo colle nel bosco,*

{ no, Sir, there's but a little
hill in the wood.

*E difficile la strada nel
bosco?*

{ is it a difficult way thro'
the wood?

Non potete smarrirla,

{ you cannot lose your way.

*Quando sarete fuor del
bosco ricordatevi di te-
nere a man manca,*

{ when you come out of the
wood remember to keep
to the left-hand.

*Vi ringrazio Signore, e vi
resto molto obligato,*

{ I thank you Sir, and am
much obliged to you.

*Via, via, Signori, monti-
amo a cavallo,*

{ come, come, Gentlemen,
let's take horse.

Dov'è 'l Signor Marchese?

{ where's the Marquiss?

E' andato innanzi,

{ he's gone before.

*V'aspetterà fuori della
città,*

{ he stays for you just out
of town.

*Cb'aspettiamo? partia-
mo, andiamo, via, via,
finiamola or sbrighia-
mola,*

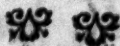
{ what do we stay for now?
come, come, let's be
gone, let's have done.

A Dio Signori, a Dio,

{ farewell, Gentlemen,
farewel.

V'auguro un felice viaggio,

{ I wish you a good journey.



DIALOGO Quartodecimo. *The Fourteenth Dialogue.*

Della cena, e dell'
alloggiamento.

For Supper and Lodging.

Eccoci giunti all' Albergo,

{ So, we are arriv'd at
the Inn.

Smontiamo, Signori,

let us alight then.

*Pigliate i cavalli di questi
Signori, abbiatene cura,*

{ take these Gentlemens-
horses, and take care
of them.

*Orsù vediamo che ci darete
da cenare,*

now let's see what you'll
give us for supper.

*Un capone, mezza dozzina
di piccioni, un' insa-
lata, sei quaglie, e una
dozzina di lodole,*

a capon, half a dozen of
pigeons, a sallad, six
quails and a dozen of
larks.

*Comandan' altro loro Sig-
nori?*

will you have any thing
else?

*Basta, dateci buon vino, e
delle frutta,*

that's enough, give us
some wine and a dessert.

*Lasciate fare a me, sa-
ranno contenti,*

let me alone I'll please you
I warrant.

Fate lume a questi Signori,

light these Gentlemen.

Fateci cenar quanto prima,

{ let's have our supper as
soon as possible.

*Prima che le siano cavati
gli stivali, la cena sarà
in ordine,*

before you have pull'd
your boots off, supper
shall be ready.

*Che si portino là su le nostre
valeggie, e pistole,*

{ let them carry our port-
manteaus and pistols
up stairs.

*Cavatemi gli stivali, e
anderete doppo a vedere
se averanno dato del fieno
ai cavalli,*

pull off my boots, and
then you shall go see
whether they have given
the horses any hay.

- Li condurrete al fiume, ed
averete cura che sia loro
data la biada,* } you shall carry them to the
river, and take care they
give them some oats.
- Averò cura del tutto, V. S.
non si pigli fastidio,* } I'll take care of every
thing, don't trouble
your self.
- Signori, la cena è in or-
dine, s'è portata in ta-
vola,* } Gentlemen, supper's ready
'tis upon the table.
- Adeſs' adeſſo, verremo,
Andiamo a cenar Signori,
acciocche poſſiamo andare
al letto a buon ora,* } we'll come preſently.
let's go to ſupper, Gen-
tlemen, that we may go
to bed betimes.
- Dateci a lavare or dateci
l'acqua alle mani,* } give us water, to waſh our
hands.
- Sediamo, Signori, entriamo
a tavola,* } let's ſit down, Gentlemen,
let's ſit down to table.
- Dateci a bere,* } give us ſome drink.
to your healths, Gen-
tlemen.
- Brindifi alle Signorie loro,
E buono il vino? non è
cattivo,* } is the wine good? 'tis not
bad.
- Il capone non è cotto ab-
baſtanza,* } the capon is not done
enough.
- Dateci merangoli or na-
ranci, con un poco di
pepe,* } give us ſome oranges,
with a little pepper.
- Perchè non mangiate di
queſti piccioni?* } why don't you eat of theſe
pigeon's?
- Ho mangiato un piccione,
o tre lodole,* } I have eaten one pigeon
and three larks.
- Andate a domandare uno
ſcaldavivande,* } go call for a chafing-diſh.
- Dite all' oſte che venga a
parlarci,* } bid the landlord come to
ſpeak with us.

DIALOGO Quintodecimo. *The Fifteenth DIALOGUE.*

Per contar coll' Oste.

*To reckon with the Landlord.*Buona sera Signori, sono
contente le Signorie loro
della cena?A good evening Gentle-
men, are you satisfy'd
with your supper?Siamo contenti, ma bisogna
sodisfarvi,we are, but we must sa-
tisfy you too.

Quanto abbiamo speso?

what have we had?

La spesa non è grande,

the reckoning is not great.

Vedete quanto vi viene, per
noi, per i nostri servitori,
e per i cavalli,see what you must have
for us, our men, and our
horses.Contino le Signorie loro, e
vederanno che sono sette
scudi,reckon your selves, and
you'll find it comes to
seven crowns.Mi pare che domandate
troppo,methinks you ask too
much.

Anzi fo buonissimo mercato,

on the contrary I am
very reasonable.Quanto ci fate pagar per
il vino?how much do you make
us pay for the wine?

Quindici soldi per fiasco,

fifteen pence a flask.

Portatene un' altro, e vi da-
remo domattina sette scudi
facendo colazione,bring us another, and
to-morrow morning
we'll pay you seven
crowns at breakfast.Par che 'l Signor non sia
bene,methinks the Gentleman
is not well.Sto bene, ma sono lasso,
e fatigato,I am very well, but weary
and fatigu'd.

Bisogna farsi animo,

you must take courage.

Certo che sarei meglio in
letto ch' a tavola,'twould be better for me to
be in bed than at table.Faccia scaldare il suo letto,
e vada a dormire,get your bed then warm'd,
and go to bed,

Dite al mio servo che ven- } bid my man come and un-
 ga a spogliarmi. } dress me.
 L' aspetta in camera, } he waits for you in your
 } chamber.
 Buona notte, Signori, state } good night, gentlemen, I
 allegramente, } wish you merry.
 Avete bisogno di qualche } do you want any thing or
 cosa or d' altro ? } any thing else ?
 Niente affatto, che di riposo, } nothing at all but rest.
 Date ordine che ci diano } order them to give us
 lenzuola bianche, } clean sheets.
 Le lenzuola ch' averanno } the sheets you shall have
 sono bianche di bucata, } are whiten'd and wash-
 ed in lie.
 Fateci svegliare domani a } let us be call'd to-morrow
 buonora, } very early.
 Saranno serviti. A Dio, } I will not fail. Farewel,
 Signori, buona sera, } Gentlemen, good night.

DIALOGO Seftodecimo. *The Sixteenth DIALOGUE.*

Per montare a Cavallo. *To get on Horseback.*

Ecco un cavallo c' ha ciera } there is a horse methinks
 d' essere cattivo, } looks scurvily.
 Datemi un' altro cavallo, } give me another, I won't
 non voglio questo, } have that.
 Non puo andare or caminare, } he can't go.
 E' bolfo, è rappreso. } he's broken-winded, he's
 founder'd.
 Non avete vergogna di } are not you asham'd to
 darmi una rozza di } give me such a jade as
 quella sorte ? } this ?
 E' sferrato, è inchiodato, } he has no shoes, he's
 unshod.
 Bisogna condurlo dal Ma- } you must lead him to the
 rescalco, } Smith's.

- Zoppica, è stroppiato, è } he goes lame, he's maim'd,
 cieco, or non ci vede, } he's blind.
 Questa sella mi farà male, } this saddle will gall me.
 Le staffe sono troppo } the stirrups are too long,
 lunghe, troppo corte, } too short.
 Allongate le staffe, tirate } Let them out then, shorten
 sù le staffe, } them.
 Le cinghie sono marcie, } the girths are rotten.
 Che cattiva briglia! } what a sorry bridle's here!
 Datemi la mia frusta, } give me my whip.
 Attaccate or legate la va- } tie on my portmanteau,
 leggia, il mio mantello, } my cloak.
 Son caricate le vostre pi- } are your pistols charg'd?
 stole? }
 Mi sono scordato di com- } I forgot to buy powder
 prar polvere, e palle, } and balls.
 Sproniamo, andiamo più } let us put on, let us go
 presto, } faster.
 Non ho mai visto una più } I never saw a worse beast.
 cattiva bestia, }
 Non vuol nè andare in- } he will neither go forward
 nanzi, nè in dietro, } nor backward.
 Lasciategli la briglia or } let go the bridle a little.
 dategli la mano, }
 Pigliate le redini più corte, } hold the reins shorter.
 Spronate con vigore, fa- } spur him stoutly, make
 telo andare innanzi, } him go.
 L'ho spronato ma in vano, } I have spur'd him in
 vain.
 Scendete or smontate, che } alight, I will make him
 lo farò ben andare, } go.
 Avvertite che non vi tiri } take care he don't kick
 un calcio, } you.
 Tira calci adunque come } he winces then I find.
 vedo, }
 Vedete se non l'ho saputo } see if I have not master'd
 domare, } him.*

DIALOGO Decimosettimo.

The Seventeenth DIA-

LOGUE.

Per visitare un' Amma-
lato.

To visit a sick Person.

Come avete passata la
notte?How have you pass'd the
night?Malamente, non ho dor-
mito affatto,very badly, I have not
slept at all.Ho avuto la febbre per
tutta la notte,I have had a fever all
night.Sento dolori per tutta la
vita,I have pains all over my
body.

Avete preso qualche cosa?

have you taken any thing?

Bisogna farvi cavar san-
gue,

you must be let blood.

M'è stato cavato sangue
due volte,

I have been blooded twice.

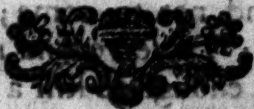
Dove sta di casa il vostro
speciale?where does your apothecary
live?Andate a dire al chirur-
go che venga a medi-
carmi,go bid the surgeon to
come and dress me.No, so perchè il medico
non viene!I wonder the doctor is
not come!Non si sa cosa sia sanità,
che quando si sta am-
malato,we do not know what
health is till we are
sick.Bisogna fare animo, non
sarà niente,you must take courage,
'twill be nothing.Sento un grande spasimo
nell' mia piaga,I feel my wound rage
cruelly.

Sete stato purgato?

have you been purged?

Quante Medicine avete
prese?how much physick have
you taken?

<i>Sono stufo or faticato di</i>	}	I am weary of physic.
<i>medicine,</i>	}	
<i>Temo che io non dia in</i>	}	I am afraid of being light-
<i>delirio,</i>	}	headed.
<i>Bevete acqua cotta.</i>		drink some ptisan.
<i>Non pigliate altro che brodi,</i>		take nothing but broth.
<i>Il medico m'ha ordinato</i>	}	the doctor has order'd me
<i>sero,</i>	}	some whey.
<i>Non mi posso muovere,</i>	}	I am not able to stir
	}	myself.
<i>Datemi un guanciale,</i>		give me a pillow.
<i>Accomodate il mio capez-</i>	}	beat up my bolster.
<i>zale,</i>	}	
<i>Tirate le cortine,</i>		draw the curtains.
<i>Mi vogliono far cavar</i>	}	they will bleed me in the
<i>sangue dal piede,</i>	}	foot.
<i>Quanto piglia mi par' a-</i>	}	every thing I take seems
<i>maro,</i>	}	bitter to me.
<i>Oh quanto sono sfogliato,</i>	}	how my mouth's out
	}	of taste.
<i>Questa è una malattia</i>	}	'Tis a long sickness you
<i>molto lunga,</i>	}	have undergone.
<i>Quanto mi rincresce lo</i>	}	how weary am I of lying
<i>stare in letto,</i>	}	a bed.
<i>Beato voi di star bene,</i>	}	how happy are you in
	}	being well.



COLLECTION

Of the Choicest

ITALIAN PROVERBS.

THE PROVERBS in any Language are not only to be considered as ornamental parts thereof, but likewise as by their expressive significancy they add a peculiar strength to it. They cannot be literally translated without losing their natural grace and beauty: However, in the following Collection, they are in general either truly rendered into English, or the sense given by an English Proverb of equivalent meaning.

Aspettare e non venire; Essere al letto e non dormire; Servire e non gradire; Son tre cose da far morire.

To expect and not to come; To be in bed and not to sleep; To serve and not be thanked; are three things enough to kill a man.

A cader va chi troppo in alto sale.

He who rises too high is near to his downfall.

Aquila non mangia mosche.

An eagle eats no flies; *i. e.* a great person expects a great present.

Al

Al molino ed alla sposa sempre manca qualche cosa.
To a mill and to a bride there always wants
something.

Appetito non vuol falsa.
A good appetite needs no fauce.

Ad ogni uccello 'l suo nido è bello.
Every bird likes his own nest.

Al buon vino non bisogna frasca.
Good wine needs no bush.

Al più tristo porco vien la miglior pera.
The worst swine has often the best pearl.

Amor e Signoria, non voglion compagnia.
Love and Lordship will bear no competitor.

Aria, donna e fuoco ti fan spesso mutar di luoco.
Air, woman and fire, cause one often to change
place.

All' assente ed al morto niun li facci torto.
Let no one wrong the absent or the dead.

Ad ogni volpe piace il pollajo.
Every fox likes a hen-roost.

A cavallo che non porta sella, biada non si crivella.
To a horse carrying no saddle, oats are not to
be sifted.

A tal nave, tal batello.
As the ship is, so is her skiff.

A tal pozzo, tal secchio.
As the well is, so is the bucket.

A tal propesta, tal riposta.
As the question, so the answer.

A tal ruina, tal pontello.
As the ruin is, so the prop.

A gran sole, grand' occhio.
As the sun, so the eye.

A causa persa, parole assai.

When a suit is lost, there are words enough.

Anco delle volpi vecchie rimangono al laccio.

Even old foxes are caught in the snare.

A parola a parola si scrivono gran libri.

Word by word great books are written.

Acqua cheta vermi mena.

A still water breeds worms.

Ad ogni gran stato un inimico è troppo, e cento amici pochi.

One enemy is too much to any great state, and a hundred friends too few.

Affai pampani, e poca uva.

Leaves enough, but few grapes.

A tavola rotonda, non si contende del luoco.

At a round table there is no dispute of place.

Amicizia con danno, lasciala andar col mal' anno.

Friendship prejudicial, let it go with a vengeance.

BELLE parole e cattivi fatti, ingannano i savj e matti.

Fair words and foul play cheat both young and old.

Batter due chiodi ad una calda.

To kill two birds with one stone.

Bisogna portar rispetto al can per il padrone.

We must love the dog for his master's sake.

Beneficio tardi venuto, per niente è tenuto.

A good deed that comes late is little esteem'd.

Brutta cosa è 'l povero superbo, e 'l ricco avaro.

It is an unbecoming thing to see the poor proud and rich covetous.

Bonaccia, tempesta spesso minaccia.

A calm, often portends a storm.

Cavallo,

Cavallo di vettura, fa profitto ma non dura.

A hackney horse brings in money but does not last long.

Casa fatta e vigna posta, no si paga quanto costa.

A house built and a vine planted, is never sold for what it cost.

Cent' ore di cordoglio, non pagano un quadrin di debito.

A hundred hours of sorrow won't pay debts.

Cbi va al letto senza cena, tutta la notte si dimena.

He who goes supperless to bed does nothing all night but tofs and tumble.

Corvi con corvi non si cavan mai gli occhi.

Ravens with ravens never pluck out one another's eyes.

Col tempo e colla paglia si maturano le nespole.

Time and straw ripen medlars.

Can cb' abbaja non morde mai.

A barking dog never bites.

Can cb' abbaja assai, morde ben poco.

A dog that barks much, bites little.

Cbi ti fa carezze più che non suole, o t' ha ingannato o ingannar ti vuole.

He that is fonder of you than usual, either has cheated you or designs it.

Cbi per man d' altri si pasce, tardi si satolla.

He who is fed by another's hand, is not like to be soon satisfied.

Cbi compra terra, compra guerra.

He who buys land purchaseth strife.

Cbi cerca d' ingannar, resta ingannato.

The cheater is often cheated.

Cbi dorme coi cani, si leva con pulci.

Who lies with dogs, rises with fleas.

Con arte ed inganno si vive mezo l' anno.

With artifice and deceit we live half the year.

Con inganno e con arte si vive l' altra parte.

With deceit and artifice we live the other half.

Chi serve al comune, non serve a nissuno.

He that serves the public, obliges no body.

*Chi ha cattiva moglie o rognà, altro mal non li
besogna.*

He who has a bad wife or the itch needs no
worse plagues.

Cosa fatta per forza, non vale una scorza.

A favour done by force, is not worth a rush.

Con denari ed amicizia, non si cura di giustizia,

He who has money and friendship, need not
fear laws.

Chi segue il prudente, mai sene pente.

He that follows the prudent, never repents.

*Cavallo restivo vuol sperone, e cattiva moglie vuol
bastone.*

A stubborn horse must be spurred, and a bad
wife cudgelled.

*Cinque ore dorme il viandante, sette lo studente,
otto il mercante, ed undici ogni furfante.*

The traveller sleeps five hours, the student six,
the merchant eight, and every knave
eleven.

Chi non può batter il cavallo, batte la sella.

Who cannot beat the master, beats his dog.

Chi pecora si fa, il lupo la mangia.

Who makes himself a sheep, the wolf devours
him.

Chi tutto abbraccia, nulla strigne.

Who embraceth all, nothing gains.

Chi

*Cbi lascia il poco per l' assai, nè l' un nè l' altro
avrà mai.*

All covet, all lose.

*Cbi lava la testa all' asino, perde il sapone, e cbi
predica al deserto, perde il sermone.*

Who washes an ass's head loses his soap, and he
who preacheth in a wilderness, loses his
speech.

Cbi troppo la tira, presto la rompe.

Who wire-draws a thing too much, suddenly
breaks it.

Cbi due lepri caccia, uno perde e l' altro lascia.

Who hunts two hares, loses one and deserts
the other.

Cbi tutto vuole, di rabbia muore.

Who covets all, dies raving mad.

*Cbi asino è, e cervo esser si crede, al saltar del
fosso sen' avvede.*

He that is an ass and thinks himself a hart,
finds his mistake in leaping the ditch.

Cbi segue il rospo, cade nel fosso.

He that follows a toad, falls into a ditch.

*Cbi cucina la minestra colle frascbe, la fa saper di
fumo.*

Who cooks his pottage with brambles, will make
it smell of smoke.

Cbi teme il cane, si assicura dal morso.

Whoso fears a dog, keeps himself from being
bitten.

Can battuto dal bastone, ha paura dell' ombra.

A dog beaten with a stick, fears the shadow of it.

*Can scottato dall' acqua calda, ha paura della
fredda.*

A dog scalded with hot water, is afterwards
afraid of cold.

Cbi di gallina nasce, da gallina convien che ruspi.
Who is of a hen brood, must needs scrape and save.

Cbi ha amor in seno, ha speroni a' fianchi.
Who hath love in his breast, has spurs at his sides.

Cbi non fa, non falla.
Who attempts not, fails not.

Cbi va e torna, fa buon viaggio.
Who goes and returns, makes a good voyage.

Cbi va piano va sano e lontano.
Soft and fair goes far.

Cbi d'altrui si veste, presto si spoglia.
He who puts on other folks cloaths is quickly stript.

Cbi ha accordato l'oste, puo andarsen' a dormire.
He who has reckoned with his host, may go his way to bed.

Cbi tardi arriva, mal' alloggia.
Who comes late, fares ill.

Cbi prima arriva al mulino, prima macina.
First come to the mill, first grind.

Cbi la fa l'aspetta.
Who does an injury expects a revenge.

Cbi fa i fatti suoi, non s'imbratta le mani.
He who transacts his own affairs, defiles not his hands.

Cbi troppo parla, dà consiglio a pochi.
Who prates too much, counsels but few.

Cbi vuole anda e chi non vuole manda.
He who wants a thing will go himself, if not he will send.

Cbi

Cbi muta paese muta ventura.

Change of country, change of fortune.

Cbi biasima vuol comprare.

Who finds fault means to buy.

Cbi ha mangiato le candele, caca gli stoppini.

Who hath eaten the candles avoids the wicks.

Cbi dà ciancie, pasce colla cucchiara vuota.

Who gives good words, feeds with an empty spoon.

Cbi vuol saper quel che il suo sia, non faccia mallevaria.

He who would know what he is worth, let him not become surety.

Cbi ti dà un' osso, non ti vorrebbe morto.

Who grants you a boon does not wish you dead.

Cbi fatica è tentato da un demonio, cbi sta in ozio da mille.

Who labours is tempted by one devil, but who stands idle by a thousand.

Cbi ad altri insegna, ancora per se impara.

He who teaches others instructs himself.

Cbi invita paga.

He who invites bears the expence.

Cbi 'l suo secreto dice, servo si fa.

He who tells his secrets makes himself a slave.

Consiglio frettoloso, di rado fruttuoso.

Hasty counsel is seldom profitable.

DURO con duro, non e buon' a far muro.

Hard with hard never makes a good wall.

Dimmi con cbi vai, saprò quel che fai.

Tell me your company, I shall know what you do.

Domanda all' oste se ha buon vino.

Ask the vintner if the wine be good.

Dolor per donna morta, dura fin' alla porta.

Sorrow for a dead woman, goes no farther
than the door.

Dall' unghia si conosce il leone.

The lion is known by his paw.

*Dall' amico mi guardi Dio, che dal nemico mi
guard' io.*

God keep me from me friends, and I'll keep
myself from my enemies.

Donna baciata, è mezza guadagnata.

A woman that is kiss'd is half gain'd.

Doppo il fatto non vale il pentimento.

When a thing is done, repentance comes too
late.

Dove l' oro parla ogni lingua tace.

Where gold is the orator every tongue is silent.

E' meglio andar solo, che mal' accompagnato.

'Tis better being alone than in bad com-
pany.

E' caduto dalla padella sulle bragie.

Out of the frying pan into the fire.

E' meglio un buon' amico, che cento parenti.

A good friend is worth a hundred relations.

*E' meglio essere uccello di campagna che di
gabbia.*

'Tis better being a bird in the field than in the
cage.

E' meglio un novo oggi, che domani una gallina.

An egg to day is better than a hen to-morrow.

E'

E meglio essere amici da lontano, che nemici da vicino.

It is better being friends at a distance, than enemies near home.

E doppio come una cipolla.

He is double as an onion.

E meglio dar la lana che la pecora.

'Tis better to part with the wool than the sheep.

E meglio ozioso stare, che oziosamente operare.

It is better to stand idle, than to do a thing in an indolent manner.

E men degno dell' onor, chi più lo cerca.

He is least worthy of honour who most seeks it.

F Ebbre autunnale o è lunga o mortale.

Fevers in autumn are long or mortal.

Fanno conoscer l' uomo il carico e l' uffizio.

A man's office or employ discovers what he is.

G Iovane ozioso, vecchio bisognoso.

A young man that is lazy, will be poor when he's old.

Guardati dall' adulator, e dalla donna senz' amore.

Beware of a flatterer, and a woman without love.

Gli errori dei medici, la terra li copre.

The earth covers the faults of physicians.

Gli uomini non si misurano a braccia.

Men are not measured by the yard or ell.

Il vino è una mezza corda.

We speak truth in our cups.

Il pesce grosso mangia il piccolo.

The great fish swallow the little ones.

I fatti sono maschi, e le parole sono femine.

Deeds are male, and words female.

In bocca serrata non v'entrò mai mosca.

In a close mouth a fly never enters.

Il martel d'oro spezza le porte di ferro.

A golden hammer breaks the iron gates.

I prencipi s'abbracciano, ed i sudditi s'ammazzano.

Princes hold together, while their subjects slaughter each other.

Il lupo perde il pelo, ma non il vizio.

A wolf loses his hair, but not his malice.

Il lupo non mangia il lupo.

One wolf devours not another.

Il lupo morde le carni d'altri, e le proprie lecca.

The wolf bites the flesh of others, but licks his own.

Il patto rompe leggi.

Conditions break laws.

Il guadagnare insegna lo spendere.

One's gettings regulate one's spendings.

I fiumi non s'ingrossano d'acqua chiara.

Rivers swell not with clear water.

Insalata ben salata, poco aceto e ben ogliata.

A fallad ought to be well seasoned with a little vinegar and much oil.

La vostra bocca sana quel che tocca.

Your mouth heals whatever it touches.

Lingua

Lingua Toscana in bocca Romana.

The Tuscan tongue in a Roman mouth.

La fornace prova l'oro, e l'oro prova la donna.

A furnace trieth gold, and gold trieth women.

L'amor dei sudditi è la forza de' principi.

The love of subjects is the strength of princes.

La rana non morde, perche non può.

The frog bites not, because she cannot.

Lascia che il pesce si cuoca nel suo oglio.

Let the fish fry in its own fat or grease.

La lingua non ha osso, e rompe il dosso.

A tongue has no bone, yet it breaks one's back.

L'asino pur pigro, stimolato, tira qualche calcio.

An ass, though slow, if provok'd, will kick.

La madre pietosa, fa la figliuola tignosa.

A pitiful mother, makes a pitiful daughter.

La fame caccia il lupo fuor del bosco.

Hunger drives a wolf out of the forest.

La prima acqua è quella che bagna più.

The first shower wets most.

La gamba fa quello che vuol il ginocchio.

The leg does what the knee would have it.

La più trista ruota del carro è quella che cigola,

The worst wheel of the cart is that which creaks most.

Lezzione con lezzione fa l'uomo dotto.

Lesson after lesson makes a good scholar.

Loda il mare e tieniti alla terra.

Commend the sea but keep to the land.

La

La fame ha sempre buon cuoco.
Hunger is always the best sauce.

La candela gli altri alluma, ma se stessa consuma.
A candle lights others but consumes itself.

*La puttana è come la castagna, bella di fuori, dentro
ha la magagna.*
The whore is like a chesnut, fair to the outside,
foul within.

M*ORTA la bestia, morto il veleno.*
The beast once dead the venom dies also.

Fra i preti e polli non si veggon mai satolli.
Friers, priests and chickens are never satisfied.

Morso di pecora non passa mai pelle.
The bite of a sheep never pierceth the skin.

Muro bianco, carta da matti.
A white wall is paper for fools.

N*E donna, nè tela, non comprare alla candela.*
We should not choose women nor linen by
candle-light.

Non sempre ria fortuna un luogo tiene.
Bad fortune is not confined to place.

Non si può aver la rosa senza spine.
There's no roses without thorns.

Non v'è pelo che non abbia la sua ombra.
There is no hair but has its shadow.

Non v'è tizzone che non abbia il suo fumo.
There is no firebrand but will smoke.

*Non tutti i fusi riescono dritti, nè tutte le balle
tonde.*

All spindles do not prove straight, nor all balls
round.

Non

Non sempre il bel seren' è in cielo.
It is not always fair weather above in the sky.

Non vien dì, che non venga sera.
There is no day, but night follows.

Non conosce il bene chi non ha provato 'l male.
He knows not what good is who has not try'd
the evil.

Non s' inganna, se non chi si fida.
No body's deceiv'd but he that confides.

Non tutti che vanno in chiesa fanno orazione.
It is not every one that goes to church that says
his prayers.

Non v' è abbastanza, se niente avvanza.
There is not enough, if nothing be left.

Non ride sempre la moglie del ladro,
The thief's wife doth not always laugh.

Non è bello quel ch' è bello, ma è bello quel che piace.
Beauty is founded in opinion.

OGGI in figura, domani in sepoltura.
To-day in a figure, to-morrow in the grave.

Odi, vedi e taci se vuoi viver in pace,
Hear, see, and be silent, if you'll live in peace.

Ogni acqua va al amare.
All waters run into the sea.

Ogni fatica vuol premio.
Every labour will have its reward.

Un' ozioso, è di rado virtuoso.
An idle man, is seldom virtuous.

PATTO chiaro, amico caro.

A fair bargain, a dear friend.

Passato il pericolo, gabbato il santo.

We think no more of promises when the danger is past.

Peccato vecchio penitenza nuova.

New penance to an old crime.

Peccato celato è mezzo perdonato.

A hidden sin is half pardoned.

Pigliar due colombi ad una fava.

To kill two birds with one stone.

Pan che veda, vin che salti, formaggio che pianga.

Bread that sees, wine that leaps, cheese that weeps.

Piace il tradimento, ma non il traditore.

Treason pleaseth but not the traitor.

Per molto variar natura è bella.

Nature is beautiful by its great variety.

Placato il cane, facile è il rubbare.

The dog once appeas'd, it is easy stealing.

Pecora che bela perde il boccone.

A bickering sheep loseth her pasture.

Piaga antiveduta assai men duole.

A wound foreseen pains one the less.

QUANDO il pero è maturo, bisogna che cada,
When the pear is ripe, it must fall.

Quando la superbia galoppa, la povertà le va in groppa.

When pride gallops, poverty sits behind.

Questa farina non è del vostro sacco.

This is no flour of your sack.

SACCO

SACCO vuoto non puo stare in piedi.

An empty sack cannot stand on end.

Scalda più amore che mille fuochi.

Love warms more than a thousand fires.

Spesso chi crede il fumo fuggir, cade nel fuoco.

Oftentimes those who think to avoid the smoke
fall into the fire.

Spesso sott' abito vile, s' asconde tesor gentile.

Often under a mean habit is hid a fine treasure.

TAL paese, tal' usanza.

Every country has its custom.

Tre cose sempre ci costano; carrezze del cane, amor
di corteggiana, ed invito d' oste.

Three things always bring cost; the fawning of
a dog, the love of a whore, and the
invitation of an host.

Tristo chi sta tra l' incudine e 'l martello.

Sad is he who stands between the anvil and the
hammer.

Tanto vale la persona, quanto si fa valere.

A person is esteem'd according to his behaviour.

UNA pecora marcia, ne guasta un branco.

One scabby sheep infects a whole flock.

Val più una beretta che cento scuffie.

One man is worth an hundred women.

Una bella corteggiana ed un bel cavallo, sono due
bei animali.

A fair whore and a fine horse are two fine beasts.

Una mano lava l' altra, ed ambedue lavan' il viso.

One hand washes t'other, and both the face.

Un

Un bel morire, tutta la vita onora.

A good death, honours a man's whole life.

Un disordine, fa un' ordine.

A disorder begets order.

Un viaggio e due servizj.

One journey and two errands.

Un paio d' orecchie bastano a seccar cento lingue.

One pair of ears is enough to exhaust a hundred
tongues.

Vien presto consumato l' ingiustamente acquistato.

What is ill gotten is soon consumed.

F I N I S.

17 AP 66

